

# *Carolyn's Journal*

---

**A Frontier Woman**

*Amos Hawkins*

Carolyn's Journal

Dedicated in loving memory of  
my eldest son,  
**CHARLES,**  
who helped me with this book  
until his untimely end.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Table of Contents

Foreword		iii
Prologue		iv
Acknowledgments		X
One	THE EARLY YEARS	1
Two	THE ENGLISH ADVENTURE	15
Three	THE PRUSSIAN DISAPPOINTMENT	23
Four	MY KNIGHT IN SHINING ARMOR	35
Five	OFF TO OHIO	48
Six	THE JOURNEY	60
Seven	THE FIRST OF MANY	73
Eight	THE TWINS	80
Nine	MY ADOPTED DAUGHTER	95
Ten	THE COTILLION	108
Eleven	A GREAT TRAGEDY	120
Twelve	A TRUE CINDERELLA	133
Thirteen	AN OLD FLAME REKINDLED	145
Fourteen	SHE GETS HER BARON	159
Fifteen	CONFINED!	171
Sixteen	HIRED HELP	186
Seventeen	A WILDERNESS JOURNEY	200
Eighteen	RUTH ANN MARRIES	214
Nineteen	FIFTEEN IS ENOUGH!	220
Twenty	OUR CHILDREN	229
Twenty One	THE LAST DAYS	237
Twenty Two	A LETTER TO SUZIE	246
Glossary		251
Further Reading		258

## Carolyn's Journal

### **Foreward**

The story you are about to enjoy is of a young lady who lived in the early 1800's. She traveled to Europe at her mother's insistence for a husband and almost married a Baron, but found him unfaithful. She returned to America and married a common worker. After her marriage, she and her husband traveled through virgin forests and over primitive roads to southern Ohio. It is here that she spent her life aiding the people in and around Pine Grove Furnace.

This is a historical fiction novel based upon historical facts that have been gleaned from old newspapers, old letters, old journals, interviews with descendants of people directly involved, census records, and genealogical records. I have researched for this book 3 ½ years.

The characters in this book are fictitious except for those in public domain.

It is my hope that you will enjoy reading this novel and will learn of the life in the early 1800's---their joys, their dreams and their sorrows.

A.H.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Prologue

The latter part of the year 1811 and the first part of the year 1812 was the time of the fulfillment of the Shawnee Indian chief, Tecumseh's, predictions and signs.

On November 16, 1811, a Saturday, just before midnight, an incredibly bright light with a weird greenish-white glow passed from the southwest to the north east. This light was the beginning of the countdown to the earth shaking prediction of Tecumseh.

On December 16, 1811, a Monday at 2:30 A.M. the earth did indeed shake. It was felt from southern Canada to Florida. It rattled the earth from the western plains to the Atlantic ocean! Huge boulders shook loose from their moorings and rumbled down mountainsides flattening everything on their way to the bottom. Cliff sides shook loose and slid to the bottom of ravines and filled the hollow. The lakes, Michigan and Erie, had tidal waves come ashore. The western plains ground and shuddered jarring the bones of the residents. Earthen vessels split apart and shattered. Bricks and stones of chimneys shattered and fell to the earth in a rubble pile. Buffalo on the plains stampeded. Portions of the forests fell in a tangled mess. Rivers and creeks went dry - leaving fish to die on what was the bottom. New rivers and creeks began to flow where there had been none before. Some homes shuddered and shook and then collapsed inward upon themselves. Ponds and lakes went dry and new ones formed where there hadn't been any before.

The center of this was in a point where Tennessee, Missouri, Kentucky and Illinois come together. Here the ground opened in wide gaps and swallowed huge tracts of real estate. One huge section of earth sank like a giant foot had stepped on mud. This then filled with water from springs and became a lake known today as Reelfoot Lake in Tennessee.

The whole mid-section of the Mississippi River undulated like a tablecloth being shook. The earth raised and at one time the Mississippi River stopped, gurgled and began flowing backward! The quake lasted intermittently for two terror-filled days. At the end of those two days, the air was filled with dust, fumes and smoke to where the sun shone a reddish brown through the ugly pollution. On January 23, 1812, a second quake hit the same area and more damage was done. This one didn't last as long as the first one.

A third quake hit and did more damage on January 27, 1812. It began to look like God was trying to shake the inhabitants off of the

## Carolyn's Journal

face of the earth! Again this quake was not as abrupt as the first one, but still did some damage.

February 13, 1812, a fourth quake hit and it was worse than all three previous ones put together. There was a hideous grinding and snapping of earth. This lasted for only an hour, but damage from it was tremendous. This was the last of the quakes.

Fires had been started by the quakes so the air was polluted with dust, fumes and smoke. All of this pollution obscured the sun as these pollutants moved to the northeast. It rose into the upper atmosphere as it moved. The Northeast was already having a hard winter when this pollution arrived and covered the sun. The dust particles combined with the water in the atmosphere and made droplets of water that froze and burst as they dropped to the earth and formed huge fluffy snowflakes. The snow fell on the already frozen land.

This snow fall was of such abundance that within an hour there was a foot of snow. The snow fall was so thick that it obscured ones vision. Farmers could not tend their animals in the barn or get more wood for the fireplace. If they ventured out they would never be able to find their way. Those who did try to find their way were found frozen to death after the snow melted.

This blinding snowfall lasted for two days and then the wind began to blow as it fell. This drifted the snow to the lee side of the larger buildings. The doors and lower floors of houses were completely blocked by the snow. Smaller buildings were completely covered.

In order to supply the fireplace with material to keep the house warm, the inside partitions were chopped out and burned as well as anything else that would burn. Water to drink was gotten by opening a door or window and scooping a bucket of snow and letting it melt.

The snow stopped falling in a week and the sun shone melting the upper layer of snow. That evening it froze again and made ice on top of the snow. The next day there was more snow that covered the ice. This snowfall was only about six inches deep. This was the end of the blizzard and snowfall. The farmers put on warm clothing and began making tunnels to get out of their houses to see about their animals.

When the farmers did get out of their houses, they were greeted by an unbelievable sight. The snow hid the imperfections of the earth with the trees laden with ice and snow that sparkled like diamonds. It was a scene of breath taking beauty!

Boys and girls would bundle up with warm coats and go outdoors. They would climb to the top of the drifts and slide down on the seat of their pants or try to stand up and slide down on their shoes.

## Carolyn's Journal

This was great fun. It was more fun than hunting a hill to slide down for every farm had drifts to slide down. Some of the boys found boards to sit on as they slid the drifts. Some of the children made tunnels in the drifts and made ice of the walls with their warm hands to keep the walls from caving in on them.

As soon as the farmers had tended their animals, they saddled their horses, so they could check on their neighbors. This is when they began to get the grim details of the storm. Some had fared well and others had lost a loved one who had dared to venture out during the storm. Their bodies were only found when the snow melted.

The coup de grace for the people came in the form of a plague over the land when the snow melted. Cholera, typhoid fever, diphtheria, scarlet fever, whooping cough and the usual sicknesses of Spring. Every family was hit with one or more of these diseases. Some lost members of the family and some were left afflicted by the disease they had in some way. Those who had smallpox and lived were left with bad scars over their body. Those who had scarlet fever and lived were left with bad hearts, blind or deaf. Mumps left some men and boys sterile.

One couple outside of Boston had a bad time for a while. They were the Greens. Richard, the husband, came down with the mumps just as his wife, Hilda, was going to give birth to their first child. Hilda couldn't care for Richard for fear of giving the unborn child the mumps. Of course there was the distinct possibility that Hilda would catch the mumps also. Their home was quarantined so no one was allowed to enter. This meant that Hilda could have no one help her or be her midwife during the birth of her child.

Richard stayed in bed in one bedroom and Hilda went into another and stayed there as she gave birth. The baby was born in that room. Hilda had helped another lady during the birth of her child, so she had some knowledge of what to expect and do. The baby was a beautiful little girl. She had raven black hair and blue eyes.

Hilda held the baby in her arms and gave her the name she and Richard had agreed upon before hand. Carolyn was her name. Carolyn Greene. That sounded good to Hilda. Poor Richard did not get to see his daughter for two full weeks and he was over the mumps.

One of the tribes of Indians who used to live on the East coast was now living in western Pennsylvania. On this particular evening the old chief was in his wigwam with a fire to keep warm when a bright light lit up his wigwam. A voice spoke to him from the light, "The Great White Indian Princess is with you as promised long ago! She will bring

## Carolyn's Journal

peace to your people." The light disappeared and the voice spoke no more. The date was March 17, 1812.

The old chief with joy in his heart and a smile on his face started to go to tell his people when they came barging in with water buckets. They too had seen the light and thought the old chief had set his wigwam on fire. They had come to put the fire out and save the old chief!

The old chief told them the story of why the Great White Indian Princess would come. He told of the earthquake in the Midwest and the blizzard in the east and how those things had been predicted to happen when the princess was to be born. The Indians wanted to see the princess, so they asked the old chief where the princess could be found.

The old chief just smiled at them and looked off toward the side of the wigwam as though he were reading the answer, "Tecumseh's great plan will fail for it is the Princess who will lead us in peace and happiness. You shall know her by her long black hair, fair skin, blue eyes and small stature. When you first see her, she will be going through a wooded trail in a wagon. She will be with child. She and her husband will be protected by the animals they pet. Anyone who helps her will be blessed by the Great Spirit and anyone who intends her harm will be destroyed. Let the wise brave be on watch!"

Some of the braves asked, "What do we do about joining Tecumseh's coalition? He will be back for an answer."

"We do not put our tomahawk in anyone's war pole. There will be several battles and the coalition will win some of the first ones and then the coalition will begin to fall apart. They will begin to lose battles and Tecumseh will lose his life. We will stay neutral and wait for the princess to lead us in peace. The others will know about the princess when they quit the war."

The War of 1812 was fought and won by the Americans. The British and Indians fought hard and took a great toll on the Americans. They had fought the fledgling country on Lake Erie and lost. They had burned the Capitol and yet they lost the war! Surely God was on the American side!

During the years of 1826-1827 wages were very low. A person cutting wood could make 25 cents for cutting a chord of wood, if he could find a buyer.

A farmer could get twelve and one half cents for a bushel of corn and hay sold for from four to six dollars a ton. Farmers certainly were not getting rich!

## Carolyn's Journal

A yoke of oxen sold from twenty to forty dollars. Oxen were used for pulling wagons loaded with goods.

Cattle for other uses sold for forty dollars a head.

Land could be bought by registering it with the government and purchasing it for \$1.25 per acre. These transactions were always done in the Land Office.

Some of the residents still believe in witches. There was a case that was taken to court in Lawrence County, Ohio involving a witch and a sick horse. It is still on the court records for that year. The witches were supposed to have been in a person and then a cow. It was a most interesting case. The former owner of the sick horse had burned his cow alive because he was certain the witches were in the cow and were now in the horse making it sick!

Union Furnace, near Hanging Rock, is now in blast. It will smelt about a ton of iron a day. Now Andrew Ellison and Robert Hamilton have bought about two thousand acres near Sperry Fork and are hauling materials to a spot where they will build a larger and better furnace than Union. This will be the second furnace in Lawrence County and the first one of that size.

Workers are being hired and men are coming from Virginia, Kentucky, Pennsylvania and of course Ohio. Good laborers average about ten dollars a month. This is paid in script which is good only at the company store.

The workers, being a rough and ready lot, do a lot of heavy drinking and fighting. Christian crusaders are drawn to these areas to "Christianize the heathen". A tent is set up near the workers camp and people who follow these crusades come to the area and set up campsites in which they reside while the crusade is going on. Because of the camping being done, these crusades are known as camp meetings.

Camp meetings don't have too much effect on the area because the ones they are set up for generally do not come. Most deals are still done with so much money and so much whiskey.

One of the beloved songs of the camp meetings goes like this:

*Come hungry, come thirsty, come ragged, come bare,  
come filthy, come lousy, come just as you are(air).*

During the years of 1828 - 1830 Allen Trimble was governor of Ohio. Andrew Jackson became president against the wishes of a lot of people. It was claimed that he was not an American citizen because he was born at sea while his mother was immigrating to America.

## Carolyn's Journal

Some claimed he was married to a divorced woman who was married to another man. These accusations piled up against Andrew to where he fought several duels over them.

Andrew was elected and served his country the best he knew how and for what he thought would be the best for the country. Most of the virgin forest along the east coast has been cut down. A few outcroppings can still be found and some people have saved some of the old trees around their homes. The large chestnut tree behind the barn at the Greene farm was one of those trees. Farther away from the coast and inland the virgin forests still prevail.

After the Revolution, the people on the coast and immigrants purchased land further west and began to cut the forests to make a farm for themselves. Some of these people pushed on further west past the Mississippi. Those settlers moving to the Northwest Territory found some areas devoid of forests and found some areas covered with forests.

These forests controlled the weather to some extent as they made the weather cooler in the summer and helped hold the water which was abundant in Ohio. The forests made the weather warmer in the winter.

After the forests were cut, the streams began to run a muddy color and were no longer pure. Before the trees were cut, the streams ran clear and free of any contaminants. One could get a drink out of any stream without fear of being affected by pollutants.

In the areas of forests, flowers flourished along with many beautiful butterflies and other insects. Birds of various kinds lived in these woods. There was a parrot that lived in the area. It was nothing to go out into the forest in the spring of the year and find numerous Lady Slippers growing. Ginseng and yellow root were abundant. Once the forests were cut all of these things began to disappear. They were no longer protected from their natural enemies for their habitat had been changed and they could not adapt.

These were the times and conditions of the country at the time of the beginning of this story.

## **Acknowledgments**

I wish to acknowledge my son, Dennis Hawkins, without whose help at the computer I would not have been able to complete this book. He spent many hours at the computer with me.

Carl Malone is to be acknowledged for inspiring me to write about the furnaces. He helped me locate materials and took me to the sites of most of the old furnaces. His grandfather worked as a collier for the furnaces when they were in operation.

The Briggs Lawrence County Public Library Special Collections Section with Naomi Deer as clerk has been extremely helpful in locating old newspaper articles and books on the subject.

The cooperation I received from the Ohio Historical Society, Archives-Library Division can not be overlooked. They sent me material that was important to my research.

The North Palm Beach Public Library in Florida helped me get books that were pertinent to my research.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter One THE EARLY YEARS

Father gave me this journal at my graduation from common school to keep a record of my life. Father carved the wooden cover and mother did the painting and tied it together with the ribbons. I will try to write only the main things that happen to me for the sake of space. I will start by relating my birth as told to me by mother.

I was born in the turbulent year of 1812. In December of 1811 there had been a terrible earthquake in the middle Mississippi River Valley. There were two more in January of 1812. These Quakes shook the earth. In February there was another one that was worse than the others all put together.

When all was settled down from the quakes, a bad blizzard inundated New England. It lasted into the first of March freezing those who went out in it. As the snow melted sicknesses began to appear.

There were the usual children's sicknesses of spring-grippe, mumps, measles and chicken pox. There were worse sicknesses that struck- typhoid fever, scarlet fever, whooping cough, diphtheria and scattered cases of small pox. Every family was affected in some way. Some lost husbands and fathers, some lost mothers and wives and some lost children. Those who survived either had horrible scars or were maimed in some way. It had been a bad winter.

Father caught the mumps and when he thought he was about well, they "fell" on him and he suffered another week in excruciating pain. Mother was busy trying to care for father and still stay away from him for she didn't want to catch the mumps. It was at this time that I decided to make my entrance into this world.

Needless to say I was born into a very loving family who adored me and spoiled me.

In June of 1812, President Madison called for a declaration of war against England and for the second time in 36 years the United States was at war with a country from which a number of us had emigrated. This was to be a very hard war in that New England, and Ohio took a beating. The people in the Northwest territories had wanted British troops out of their area and for England to cease inciting the Indians. The British were paying money to the Indians for any scalps they brought in of an American. They also wanted the British to quit taking men from ships at sea and pressing them into service for George the Third. This was a war in which many Americans were massacred in their own homes by Indians, mostly in Ohio and Kentucky. They also stole children.

The war seemed hopeless until England, who had ruled the seas before the war, lost the battle of Lake Erie. After that battle the war turned and at the Treaty of Ghent the war ceased and the Americans had gained freedom of the sea and more territory to settle on with less interference from the Indians. It was a fragile peace, but the treaty held.

## Carolyn's Journal

When I was five I experienced the first test of my love for my father. I have a friend my age who lives on a farm adjoining ours. Aggy's mother died giving birth, so Aggy is spoiled worse than I and is very selfish. She always has to brag about herself, always wants everything I have and does her best to get me into trouble.

One day I was playing with her and she showed me a very beautiful china doll that her father had given her. I fell in love with that doll! Aggy let me play with the doll and hold it all the time I was with her that day. This was strange behavior for Aggy for she usually would not let me hold her dolls.

When I was getting ready to go home I reluctantly handed the doll to Aggy. I told her how lucky she was to have such a beautiful doll. Aggy handed the doll back to me and told me I could have the doll! This was very un-Aggy like, but I loved that doll so much my heart wouldn't let me hear what my common sense was trying to tell me.

Aggy's governess was present and heard the whole thing. She reminded Aggy that her father had just recently purchased the doll for her.

Aggy remarked to her governess that she had a lot of dolls and it wouldn't hurt to let me have just one. The governess made no further protestations and I had a new china doll for my very own!

I walked slowly home loving that doll all the way holding it tenderly to my breast. I made certain that nothing happened to mess the doll's clothes or that it would be fractured in any way.

Arriving home I went straight to my room and placed that beautiful doll on my bed next to my old rag doll, Miss Moppet. That was certainly the most beautiful doll with its china head, legs and arms. The dress she had on was gorgeous!

In the evenings when father came home he had to come by Aggy's house and would sometimes stop to chat with Bob, Aggy's father. I would always wait by the door standing on a straight chair to hug and kiss father on the cheek. He would always greet me the same way.

This particular evening I greeted him, but he did not return my greeting. I knew then that there was something very bad wrong. We all sat and ate dinner in silence. When we had retired to the living room, father called me over, picked me up and placed me on his lap. He looked at me very sternly and asked, "Do you have Aggy's new doll in THIS house?" Father had two veins or something that would protrude up both sides of his neck when he was very upset. I noticed that those veins were sticking out and knew that I better be truthful.

"Yes I do father. She-----".

Father cut me off, "Bob told me you had stolen it from Aggy. He is very upset and wants you to bring it back!"

"I didn't steal it, father!" I began to cry.

"Bob told me you did and that is proof enough for me. Don't make up a lie about it and become a liar and a thief!"

"She did give it to me!" I cried.

## Carolyn's Journal

"I am sorry, but I cannot believe you. I want you to go get that doll and take it back to Aggy and apologize for having taken it, now!"

Father took me from his lap and put me on the floor.

"I don't love you any more!" I sobbed. "You don't believe your own daughter when you know how Aggy is!" Having said this I went stomping to my bedroom, grabbed that old china doll by one leg and half dragged it as I cried and stomped back to Aggy's. That doll wasn't near as lovable or fragile on the return trip. I went up to Aggy's door and knocked. The door opened and there stood that lying, pudgy Aggy with a smile on her face! I slung that doll as hard as I could into her stomach! It knocked the wind out of her and the doll's head fell to the floor, bounced a couple of times and rolled under a chair. I then told her what a liar she was and that I never wanted to see her or play with her again!

I cried as I traveled back to my house. I certainly wasn't going to have a china doll anymore and I had lost my father who thought of me as a liar and a thief. I didn't stop at the house. I went straight for the back of the barn where I had a rock that I liked to sit on in times like these. The animals came up to me. Chirp, the red bird, flew down and sat on the visor to my sun bonnet. I always have to wear a sun bonnet or a wide brimmed hat when I am out doors because I sunburn easily and my black hair makes my neck hot and sweaty. Fluffy, the squirrel, climbed to my shoulder and wiped my tears with her tail. Pete and Repeat, the chipmunks, played hide and seek around my feet. Buck the deer came and stood beside the split rail fence waiting to take me for a ride. The animals were trying to cheer me up! These are my animal friends. They always come to see me when I come and sit on my rock. I spend a lot of time playing with them. They sometimes seem like the only ones who really care about me.

I went over to the split rail fence and climbed to the top. I then climbed onto Buck's back and he took me for a ride. He was always careful that I did not fall off. In a few minutes he brought me back to the split rail fence and I got off and went back to my rock. I had just seated myself when Chirp let me know that mother was coming. All of the animals disappeared into a nearby woodlot. Mother came up and explained that father was very disappointed to find that his daughter had taken something that didn't belong to her. I tried to explain to mother that Aggy had given me the doll.

"That may be so, but Bob, an adult, told father that you had taken the doll and father has to take the word of an adult over that of a child, even if it is his daughter."

"I don't care, mother! He knows how Aggy lies and does things to get me into trouble! If he wants to believe her, he can have her! I am not going back into that house until he is out of it! He is not my father anymore." I sobbed. Mother looked at me and asked, "It is going to be cold out here tonight. Where are you going to sleep and how will you keep warm?"

"I'll sleep in the barn and my animals will keep me warm."

Father came to the kitchen door and called mother. She returned to the house. I had a feeling that father was going to come and get me, so I climbed the

## Carolyn's Journal

old split rail fence and then climbed into the old chestnut tree to where I would be higher than father's head.

In a minute father came out of the house and I went around to the back side of the trunk of the tree to where father could not see me. This was a trick Fluffy has taught me. Father looked all around and couldn't see me.

"Mother said that you are out here somewhere, so I will talk to you even though I can't see you. It seems that a big mistake has been made. Bob came over and told me that Aggy's governess came to him and told him the truth about the china doll caper. You did not steal the doll. Aggy did give you the doll for certain! He brought the doll with him with the intention of giving it to you as punishment to Aggy. I told him that you wouldn't have that doll now under any condition." Father's eyes began to water and his voice cracked as he remarked, "Mother told me that you want nothing to do with me after this. She said you don't even want to sleep in the same house. I'm sorry that I didn't believe you. I should have believed you as Aggy has a poor record with the truth." Father paused to wipe his eyes with his big red kerchief.

"I wish you would give me another chance." Father sniffed and then took his kerchief and blew his nose. As he did I slid around the tree trunk to his side of the tree and climbed down on the limbs to where I could drop down onto his shoulders. As I landed on his shoulders I held onto his forehead. I had never seen father cry before and all my anger melted and washed away with his tears. "Please don't cry father. I forgive you! I love you!"

Father reached up and took me from his shoulders and held me on his arm up next to his big chest. I put my arms around his neck. I really did love him. We went into the house and mother looked up from her sewing and said, "I see you two are over your little spat."

Neither of us said anything. Father carried me to my room and told me it was time I was in bed. As soon as father left the room, I got ready for bed and crawled in. I felt fortunate to have such loving and caring parents.

One day when I was seven a very odd thing happened. I was sitting on my rock playing with my animal friends and singing, when an Indian came up from the shadows of the woods and stood looking at me. All of my animals came and stood between me and the Indian. Suddenly a wolf came out of the woods and stood in front of my animals snarling and growling at the Indian. The Indian was careful not to make any sudden moves because he knew the wolf would lunge at him if he did. The Indian just got down on his knees and bowed his head for a moment. He then rose and left the area as did the wolf. My animals were protecting me from the Indian! Why? I did not know, but I would find out much later. I went back to singing to my animals as I played with them. I learned to sing as I sang to my animal friends and mother taught me some songs so I wouldn't have to make up words of my own.

I didn't know it at the time, but mother could see me and my animals from the kitchen window. When she saw the Indian come up and when the wolf showed up, she went to get father's gun to come and protect me from imminent

## Carolyn's Journal

danger. By the time she had gotten the gun and was on her way to save me, the Indian was gone and the wolf had departed to the woods. I looked at her and laughed because she was so late.

"I saw that Indian coming up to you and then the wolf. I had to save you from the Indian and the wolf, if I could. I think it best you come into the house with me and stay the rest of the day."

"Mother, I would like to stay and play with my friends if I may. There isn't anything to do in the house."

"Carolyn, I am going to insist on you coming into the house! Not too many years ago Indians were stealing children and taking them back to their tents. They would raise them as their own. You may have black hair like an Indian, but they are not going to get you and raise you as an Indian. You are my daughter!" The anxiety mother had felt had caused her to brake down into tears and she hugged me close and kissed me on the head.

That afternoon a lone tom-tom could be heard. In a few minute there was another one a little more distant. Later more tom-toms could be heard in the distance and closer. The residents of our community were all wondering if the Indians were planning another attack on white men, so they found an Indian scout who had helped the Americans during the recent war and asked him what this all meant.

He looked at them and remarked, "This is of no concern to you. This is Indian business!"

"It will be our concern if our people are slaughtered and our children are stolen!"

"You need not fear. A promised Indian Princess has been found by one of our braves and we are just spreading the word."

"I hope that is correct for I would hate to have what took place years ago to start again!" With this the men left the Indian Scout and came back and told the others.

The tom-toms kept up the unnerving noise for the rest of the night and part of the next day. Soon they changed to smoke signals from the top of high ground. In a day or two all was quiet again and I was allowed to go out to play again. Even though things seemingly had settled down, when I sat on my rock to play with my animal friends I always had that weird feeling that there were eyes I couldn't see out there watching my every move. It spoiled the fun of playing with my animal friends. One day I stood up and shouted, "I know there is someone out there! Please make yourself known and tell me why you are spoiling my time of enjoyment." For a moment there was total silence in the woods, Then several Indians came forward to where I could see them.

"We do not intend to discomfort our princess. We only wish to behold her beauty!"

"After this if you do not wish to discomfort me, make yourself known so I know that you are there!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"We shall be most happy to, Great Princess." With this said they sat on the forest floor where I could see them. From that time on I had no more weird feelings when I sat on my rock to play with and sing to my animals.

Mother looked at me one day, "Carolyn, they must think you are the Indian Princess they have been looking for. This all started after that Indian saw you that day."

"Mother! You have had too much of this Indian stuff coming at you lately! Now you have me an Indian."

"That is all right. Your father and I think of you as being our princess anyway. If the Indians want to share that thought with us, who am I to try to thwart their great wisdom?" Mother chuckled.

Father told me later that mother and he had talked and had decided that I would go to finishing school and then she would take me to Europe to see if I couldn't find a nobleman of some kind to marry. They had both agreed that I was too beautiful to sit in a house and do the household chores when I could possibly be a noble woman. I told father at that time that when I married it was going to be for keeps and it would be because I loved the fellow. I told him that I would not go against what they had planned for me, but who I marry is going to be my problem.

"Carolyn, with your long black hair, your beautiful green eyes, your small round face and your fair complexion you can probably have what ever man you decide you want."

"That may be so, father, but it is still my decision as to who I want isn't it?" "You are right there." That ended that conversation for the time being.

Now I am fourteen and have graduated from common school. Mother has already informed me that Aggy and I are going to finishing school in September. This will be the first time I have been away from home and on my own. I hope I don't make any bad decisions. I love my parents and I want to please them in all things.

Mother always includes Aggy in everything I do. I don't agree with her as Aggy sometimes embarrasses me with things she does and says. It seems I am stuck with Aggy whether I want to be or not.

By the end of August mother and I had all the things packed that I might need for finishing school. Mother went to check on Aggy and see if she needed help. Aggy didn't even have her trunk out! Mother was furious. She had Aggy's trunk brought out and told Aggy to get it packed or she would have to do a lot of washing or go naked at school. Aggy went to work and packed her trunk.

The first of September came and father hitched a horse to the surrey and brought it around to the front of the house. He put my trunk aboard and helped mother and I aboard. We drove to Aggy's house and father loaded Aggy's trunk and helped her aboard. We then traveled on to Salem and Mrs. Smith's Finishing School for Young Ladies.

When we arrived the place was alive with young girls my age and their parents. Mother, Aggy and I checked in with Mrs. Smith. I laughed when I saw her

## Carolyn's Journal

for she reminded me of a red headed woodpecker. She had long red hair, braided and wound and pinned in a conical coil on the back of her head. She also had a long skinny nose that reminded me of a woodpecker bill. She turned out to be a very nice lady and I appreciate her.

Mrs. Smith had a girl show us to our room. The room was smaller than my bedroom at home, but it was fine. The biggest problem I could see was having to share the room with Aggy. Any other girl would be fine. I just grinned and made the best of it.

The beds were made one on top of the other. I knew that if I wanted any peace, I would have to take that top bed.

After all the parents had left, Mrs. Smith called us to the living room to get acquainted. She asked each of us to stand, give our name and anything else we might want to reveal. Mrs. Smith was calling our names in alphabetical order so I got to see what some of the others were telling.

The first girl got up and stated her name and then how important her father was. The other girls followed suit. It came my turn. I stood up straight and proud and announced, "I am Carolyn Greene. My mother is Prussian and my father is Irish. They are the most loving and caring parents a girl could have. I have been known to tell of Uncle Paddy and the Little People if asked and if coaxed I might even sing a song or two." I sat down and as I did I noticed some noses tilt a little higher. Those girls thought more of themselves than they ought!

When it came Aggy's turn, she stood, told her name and what her father did and then sat down. This was strange behavior for Aggy for she liked to brag and here was a perfect chance and she didn't do it.

After the introductions were over, Mrs. Smith had tea and crumpets for the girls. As I ate my crumpets, Mrs. Smith kept watching and staring at me as though something were wrong about me. Her stare was very penetrating and annoying. When I had finished my tea and crumpets, Mrs. Smith asked me if I would sing for the ladies. I looked at her for a moment and then mentioned that perhaps the girls would prefer finishing their settling in.

Mrs. Smith turned to the other girls and asked, "You would like to hear Carolyn sing wouldn't you?"

The girls didn't have much of a choice having it put to them that way. They sat there for a moment and then some nodded approval while others vocally assented.

It appeared to me that Mrs. Smith was going to have me sing and it made little difference what the girls wishes were. I looked at Mrs. Smith, "What would you prefer I sing?"

"I have no preference. Sing whatever you like."

I decided to sing an old Irish ballad I know. I could tell that Mrs. Smith thought that I was lying when I said I could sing, but as I sang her opinion changed. When I finished everyone applauded and some asked for another song.

I had noticed Aggy sitting in a back corner alone, so I went back and brought her to where I had been singing. The two of us had sung this one song

## Carolyn's Journal

together before and Aggy had messed up on purpose. I whispered to her that she better not mess up this time or the girls would have nothing to do with her. We sang and the girls called for more. Mrs. Smith got up and announced that we should all go to our rooms and finish unpacking so we could get to bed. Tomorrow was going to be hard for most of us. We all went to our rooms and as we did some of the girls whispered to me that they enjoyed our singing. Some mentioned that I had shown Mrs. Smith that I was not lying.

Aggy and I unpacked and arranged our room as we wanted it. We were about to go to bed when some of the girls started coming in. They wanted to hear an Uncle Paddy story. Word had apparently gone out and our room was soon filled with girls. Some were sitting on the floor Indian style. Some were sitting on our beds and some were standing along the walls. One of the girls remarked that they had all come to hear an Uncle Paddy story.

"I think I am already on Mrs. Smith's bad list. If she catches me telling of Uncle Paddy instead of going to bed, she will most certainly put me on it." "She won't know if we all sit here and listen quietly."

They prevailed upon me, so I told them about Uncle Paddy and the Leprechauns. It is a very funny story and their laughter called Mrs. Smith to investigate. She stood outside the door and laughed with the girls. None of the girls had seen her and when I finished the story she stepped into the room. When she did all the girls left as though someone had yelled "fire!". Mrs. Smith remained in the room to admonish me, I thought. Instead she told me how fortunate she felt in having me there. She was looking forward to hearing me sing or tell some of my Uncle Paddy stories in the weekly assemblies. She then left the room and closed the door on Aggy and me.

I got into the top bed as Aggy blew out the candle and crawled into the bottom bed. Aggy was beginning to act civilized and it worried me. I couldn't help but wonder what she was up to.

"Thanks for letting me sing with you tonight." Aggy's voice broke through the darkness.

"You are most welcome." Now I was certain Aggy was up to something. She never thanked me for anything I ever did for her. I went to sleep thanking the Lord that she was changed for the time being. Perhaps the Lord was working on her. I could certainly use all the help I could get in that department!

All of us young ladies, as Mrs. Smith insisted on calling us, worked hard on the skills presented. We even worked during our rest time. We helped each other. When one had difficulty with a skill, the ones who could do it helped until the skill was learned. We all worked together as a group. I was one of the ladies who had difficulty learning to walk with a book on my head. I told the other ladies that it looked like to me that if the Lord had wanted me to walk with a book on my head he would have made it flat. One day I was able to walk with that book on my head so I asked one of the other ladies to look and see if the Lord had flattened my head. I was serious, but the ladies all laughed at me.

## Carolyn's Journal

No one even thought of their station in life anymore. We were one big happy family. By graduation time in May, we were all accomplished in the course of study.

Mother and father came for my graduation and Aggy's father came in a buggy to see her graduate and take her home. I was voted and received several awards by the other ladies. Aggy was voted and received some awards by the other ladies, also. She was actually surprised and broke into tears. She had never been awarded anything before. I had to feel happy for her. She was so good during the time we were at school that I almost forgot how bad she had been in the past.

I hugged and kissed the cheeks of all the other ladies. Some I was sad to see leave. They had almost become like sisters to me. I knew that I probably would never see any of them again. I also knew that they would get married and perhaps die trying to have a family. It was a happy time and a sad time. On the way home mother was quiet for a while and then she began to speak, "I have purchased passage for the three of us to go to England in June. Perhaps we can find you a titled man to marry."

"I am glad you are going to include father this time."

"No, dear. Father has to work. Aggy, you and I are going."

"Mother, why do you always have to include Aggy?"

"I do that for two reasons. I keep hoping that she will learn how to act from you. Secondly, she would not get to do these things if I did not include her with you. Bob has to work like your father and cannot take her places."

"Mother, there have been plenty of times I would liked to have strangled Aggy because of her behavior! She is Aggy and she isn't going to change because she is around me! I have been waiting for the Lord to work on Aggy and He hasn't yet!

"Perhaps he is working on you! Maybe he wants you to have more patience and be slower to anger. Did Aggy do something bad at school?"

"No, mother. She was perfect. She didn't brag or want everything her way. She worries me. I know that she is going to pull something and I am going to be sorry that I ever trusted her!"

"Now dear, you have come to suspect her because of her past. Do you suppose she could have changed?"

"No, mother I do not! She will pull one of her stunts one of these days. You just wait and see. I want to talk about this trip to England now. I do not intend to marry a man just because he has a title or money. If he doesn't respect me and love me, I will not marry him! I don't care if he is the King of England!"

"We will see, dear."

"Maybe we can get that dishwater blonde a man! Then I would be rid of her for good!"

"You are supposed to love your neighbor as yourself, dear."

No one spoke for a while. Father broke the silence, "I see the farm ahead ladies. I want you to know, Carolyn, that this place was not the same this winter."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Thank you, father. I have missed both of you even if mother is trying to get me married and away from home for good!" I laughed at the look on mother's face.

June was fast approaching, so mother got my trunk and started packing my things and sewing some new things. I discovered her doing this and made her quit.

"I can do that for myself. You need to be doing that for yourself."

"I want you to have nice looking clothes when you are in England. If you will do this for yourself, I will go check on Aggy and see how she is coming."

Mother went to check on Aggy. I pressed my clothes, folded them and packed them neatly in my trunk.

Mother came back from Aggy's upset. Aggy had not done a thing about packing.

"You would think someone in that house would think to pack Aggy some clothes if she were going on a trip! I guess they think she isn't going." Mother stormed.

"Maybe we ought to go off and leave her here." I hopefully suggested.

"That is not the answer. She is going if she doesn't have a stitch on! I can't figure out why Bob or the governess doesn't see that she gets packed. I got her started for finishing school and I am not going to do it again!"

Mother did help get Aggy packed. On the morning of our departure, father brought the surrey to the front of the house and loaded mother's trunk and then mine. He then helped mother and I aboard the surrey and we headed to Aggy's.

Mother went into the house to get Aggy and father followed to bring her trunk to the surrey. Mother discovered that Aggy had gotten into the trunk to get a dress she wanted to wear and had messed all the clothing above that dress to where all her clothes were going to be wrinkled. Mother was upset. She just mashed everything down in the trunk and slammed the lid. Father picked the trunk up and carried it to the surrey and loaded it. Aggy came bounding out of the house and jumped up onto the surrey beside me. Mother came out of the house so angry that her face was all red. No one said anything all the way to Boston Harbor.

We boarded the Mary Jane in Boston harbor. Father saw to the trunks and one of the Mates showed us our cabin. It was in the forecabin and mother had paid for a cabin in steerage.

"Are you certain this is correct? I thought I paid for a cabin in steerage."

"This will be your cabin Ma'am. We had to make a switch."

"Then I must owe some more money. Let me pay you the difference."

"No ma'am, it was our oversight." With this said the Mate left the cabin.

The cabin had three beds, one on top of the other like at Finishing School. I was quite certain I knew who would get the top bed, but I asked mother how the beds were to be assigned.

"I suggest that we wait and see if anyone gets seasick. If someone does they will have the bottom bed. I don't want someone sick sleeping above me."

## Carolyn's Journal

The Mate came by and requested that we remain in our cabin until the boat was out to sea. He mentioned that we could see some of the proceedings through our porthole if we so desired.

Aggy and I watched out the porthole. We could see several men get into a lifeboat. The boat was then lowered over the side and the men rowed the boat to the back of the Mary Jane and disappeared. In a couple of minutes they reappeared rowing with a line fastened to the back of the lifeboat and to the rear of the Mary Jane. They rowed hard and pulled the Mary Jane out into the harbor. When the Mary Jane was out into the harbor far enough, they slacked the line and then took it off the lifeboat. They then rowed back to the side of the Mary Jane and pulled the lifeboat back aboard. After they climbed the rigging and set the sail, the West wind filled the sails and we were under way!

I was amazed at the efficiency of the whole operation. I turned to say something to Aggy and she already had her head in the chamber pot! I knew for certain then who was going to get the bottom bed! This time I didn't mind because Aggy was really sick.

Mother and I got Aggy into bed, made her as comfortable as we could and then went for a walk on deck. As we walked I noticed everyone staring at me. I asked mother, "Do I have something wrong with my clothes?" Mother dropped back a pace and looked. "I don't see anything wrong. Why do you ask?"

"Everyone is staring at me."

"They are probably admiring how beautiful you are!"

"I am going to ask the next lady I see staring at me."

I didn't have long to wait. I asked a young lady and she said that there is a rumor among the crew and passengers that a princess is sailing among us incognito and everyone is certain I am she.

"I am not her and you can tell the others. Thank you for telling me." I went back to mother and told her.

Mother laughed, "You are to your father and me. That must be the reason for the switch in cabins."

We went back to our cabin to check on Aggy. She was really miserable. At other times I might have felt like throwing her over the side, but this time I had to feel sorry for her.

The captain came by to check on Aggy and give her some medicine. Aggy took the medicine, but the chamber pot got the medicine. By the time we were in the English Channel, Aggy had lost so much weight that she was slim and trim. Aggy looked in a mirror and lamented her loss saying that she wouldn't fit in any of her clothes. Mother calmed her by telling her that they would take up her clothes and that she looked much better slim.

Aggy looked at mother, "Do you really think so?"

While we were at sea I made friends with most of the passengers and kept them occupied by singing to them or telling them about Uncle Paddy. Sometimes I would have them sing with me or play games. There was one lady I liked in

## Carolyn's Journal

particular. Her name was Féodore. No one else knew, but I did. She was the real princess.

The evening that we were to dock at Southampton, she suggested that it would be fun for all four of us to get off the boat together and ride out in the Royal Carriage. We all agreed. As our trunks were being put on a Royal Wagon, we got on the Royal Carriage and rode off toward London. As the carriage pulled away from the dock, Féodore and I waved at the other passengers.

The Royal Carriage was comfortable so we all slept as it made its way to London. Aggy was the first one to go to sleep. She hadn't had a decent night's sleep since we left Boston.

The next afternoon we arrived in London at our Inn. We were not allowed to disembark the carriage until the red carpet was in place. Mother got off the carriage and headed into the Inn with Aggy and I trailing behind. Mother went up to the Inn Keeper and told him that she was Mrs. Greene who had made a reservation from America.

Percy, the Inn Keeper, saw the Royal Carriage and called three workers to take our trunks. They each took a trunk on their backs and asked that we follow them. We went to the very top floor and one of them set his trunk down as he opened the door to the room. He then had us go in while he and the others brought our trunks in and placed each one beside a bed.

Mother looked around and told the head man that there must be some mistake. He told her that this was where he was instructed to bring us and then left with the other two.

Mother looked at me, "Carolyn, if this princess nonsense keeps on it is going to get us into a peck of trouble!"

"I can't help it, mother. I didn't put a sign on my back saying I was a princess!"

"Maybe you ought to put one on your back saying that you are NOT the princess." Mother laughed at the thought of that.

"What is this all about? I missed that." Aggy asked.

I sat on the edge of one of the beds next to Aggy and brought her up to date about the princess business. Aggy snickered first and remarked, "I'm sorry your highness, I didn't mean to laugh at you." With that she let out a cackle that most of London must have heard.

There wasn't much question that Aggy was about well.

We each took the bed our trunk was by and freshened up in anticipation of going out to eat. A knock came on the door. It was the chef. He wanted to know if we were going to eat in our room and if so what we wanted. This was a surprise. We hadn't expected to eat in our room, so we decided to take advantage of it.

After a very sumptuous meal, we were ready to retire for the night. Aggy had been able to eat her first real meal since leaving Boston. It made her feel a lot better.

## Carolyn's Journal

Everyone slept well that night. The next morning we were getting ready to go out the door for breakfast when someone knocked. I opened the door expecting the chef and there stood Féodore.

"Good morning, Féodore. What brings you out so early?"

"I told my Uncle about you folks, especially Carolyn, and he wants you all to have breakfast with him at the castle."

"We couldn't possibly do that! We don't have the proper clothes to wear to the Palace!"

"Uncle is not one for formalities. You folks are fine just as you are. Uncle has a surprise for you folks that he will explain after we have eaten."

We all went with Féodore in the Royal Coach to the palace. As the coach went by workers on their way to work, the workers all stopped and watched in silence as we passed by.

As we approached the palace, the guards stopped us and when they saw Féodore they motioned the carriage on. Arriving at the front door of the Palace we were met by Féodore's uncle, the King of England. We each one curtseyed as we were introduced.

The King spoke, "Féodore told me you were beautiful. I hardly believed her. She was right about you. You have to be the Most Beautiful Lady in the World!"

I was embarrassed and managed to remark, "I am certain that there are others prettier than I."

"While you are here I want you to feel free to call me George."

"Uncle George, we came here to eat breakfast with you and then we are all going sight seeing and shopping." Féodore was trying to get her uncle's attention off me before he embarrassed all of us. George has a reputation for being partial to beautiful young ladies.

"Let's go eat by all means." George led the way to the dining hall. On the way he pointed out several items of interest. These were items that few people would be privileged to see.

After a very filling and satisfying breakfast and we were still seated at the table, George told mother that he had arranged for the three of us to stay with a friend of his.

"He is a young bachelor who happens to be very wealthy. He owns a mansion just a short distance from here. I feel that you folks will have a better chance to see the sights of England as well as those of Europe if you stay with him. He is honorable and will make you a good host. He is also a Prussian Baron."

Mother wasn't quite sure of what she was getting us into. She had come to England to see if she could find me a Duke or a Baron. Here was one being given to me by none other than the King of England. How could she refuse the King of England?

We all went sight seeing and shopping the rest of the day. Féodore was able to get us in to see some things that others will not be able to see. It was my lucky day to have made friends with Féodore.

## Carolyn's Journal

When we returned to the palace for dinner, George told us that we would be picked up by the Baron at our Inn.

After we had finished our very delicious meal, the four of us boarded the Royal Coach and returned to our Inn. Percy had the red carpet put out again. Inside the Inn was a tall, thin man who looked to be in his early twenties. He had sandy brown hair, gray eyes, a muscular build and was handsome. He looked down at us three misfits as he towered over us, "I was told one of you was the Most Beautiful Lady in the World. I see George didn't exaggerate this time."

"I see your fame has preceded you mother!" I laughed.

"Not her! You, silly!" Corrected the Baron.

"I wish people would stop embarrassing me that way. They will have me believing it next!"

"If you ladies will go back to your room and repack your trunks, I will have them driven to my place. You will ride with me."

We went to our room and repacked our trunks and returned to the lobby. The Baron took my arm and escorted me to his coach. Mother and Aggy followed. The footman helped each of us board the coach and then the Baron boarded. The coachman started the horses.

The baron sat on the seat opposite me and spoke as we bumped along the cobblestone road. "In order to get this off to a good start, Carolyn, I think you are The Most Beautiful Lady in the World and I am madly in love with you. I would be honored to have you consent to become my wife."

I was dumbfounded! "I don't know what you had for dinner, but something must not have agreed with you. You see me less than ten minutes and you already want to marry me. To set the record straight, the answer is a definite NO!"

"I love you and will wear you down to where you will say yes before you leave for home."

"In a pigs eye you will! After you get over your indigestion you will forget all about me."

"A lady of beauty and spunk! You make me love you all the more."

Aggy spoke up, "Ask me. I will be most happy to marry you!"

"I'm sorry Aggy. I don't love you, I love Carolyn."

"I will only marry a man who loves me and I love him. All you want is another mark to put on whatever you put them on of women you have worn down."

"I don't do that!" The Baron was hurt that I would think that of him. "I'll not pressure you further, but I will wear you down!"

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Two THE ENGLISH ADVENTURE

As we pulled up to a huge mansion, I could see all the beautiful, well-manicured gardens and the many gorgeous flowers. On the porch was what appeared to be the staff out to greet the visitors. The Baron introduced all of the staff. The only name that I could remember was Jeeves, the butler.

As we entered the front door, we went into the large living area. It had a huge fireplace on each end. There were chairs and divans scattered about the room. On the wall over one fireplace was a large portrait of a man that I took to be the Baron's father. Another portrait of a lady, I took to be his mother, hung over the other fireplace. There were other paintings on the walls in various places.

The ceiling in this room must have been at least twenty feet high. There were three huge, six tiered, crystal chandeliers hanging with what must have been hundreds of candles. These chandeliers could be lowered to light the candles and then raised and locked into their positions. They were lit before we entered.

Jeeves took us into the dining area next. It was the room next to the living area.

Down the middle of the dining hall was a long, rectangular, wooden table varnished and polished to a high luster. The table had chairs at its sides down its full length and one on each end. By the walls were china closets that displayed all of the fine china used at the table. There was a short chest of drawers that had all the silverware packed away. All the silverware was sorted and placed in compartments made just for them.

The ceiling in this room was just as high as the living area with two four tiered, crystal chandeliers. As we left this room, I looked back at that table and I could imagine seeing some ancient Englishman and his knights sitting about the table eating with their daggers.

We went into the ballroom. It was about the size of the two rooms we had just left put together. The ceiling of the room went all the way up to the roof of the building. One long side of the room was covered with tapestries, mirrors, doors and windows. Both ends had tapestries on them hung carefully around a fire place. The other long side had mirrors, doors and a staircase like I have never seen before.

The staircase came down from the second floor in the middle of the wall. This staircase was aglow from all of the beautiful gemstones encrusted in it. These gemstones were encrusted in the rail, the bannister and the sides of the steps. This staircase must have been almost blinding when the three six tiered, crystal chandeliers were lit during a ball.

"The master had this staircase put in special. It is to be used at a ball only by the lady he is going to marry."

## Carolyn's Journal

"How many ladies has he had marching up and down that thing?"

"Miss Carolyn, you may find it difficult to believe, but he has never had any ladies in this mansion. He wouldn't have you people here if the King had not insisted that he take you."

In the wall on either side of the staircase were four doors. Two of the doors, one on each side of the staircase went into closets for the guest's wraps and cloaks. The other two doors opened into rest rooms. One for the ladies and one for the men. Along the wall where there were no doors, chairs had been placed for the dancers to have a place to sit if they wished.

The whole ballroom was certainly a thing of beauty with its mirrors, chandeliers, tapestries and the crystal staircase.

We left the ballroom and went to the drawing room. This was where the Baron had his office. He was sitting at his desk absorbed in something on his desk as we walked in quietly.

The Baron stood up and looked at Jeeves, "You may go on about your business now. I will take them through the rest of the house."

Jeeves turned and left as he said, "Very well, sir."

The Baron took us through the den. I don't like that room. It is full of animal heads and some small preserved animals. I just do not believe in killing animals for the sport of it.

We went into the library next and it was more to my liking. It was full of books. There were rows of bookshelves from the floor to the ceiling. These shelves were full of books. Along the side of the shelves was a ladder on a track so the top books could be gotten easily. I stepped onto one of the ladders and rode it from one end of the bookshelf to the other and back. I thought that great fun so I did it again.

The Baron looked at me and questioned, "Don't you think our children will have fun doing that?"

I jumped off the ladder and almost landed on his feet. I looked up at him, "How are we going to have children doing that if we are not married?"

"We can cure that problem easily if you will just say you will marry me!"

"I'm afraid that we still have a problem because as of this moment I do not intend to marry you."

"I will wear you down yet and you will say yes!"

"Don't hold your breath while you are waiting. I don't want to have to attend your funeral!"

Aggy spoke up, "If you would ask me I would say yes in a minute and we wouldn't have to go through all this."

"Just hold on to that thought, Aggy. I just may do that later."

Aggy smiled like I have never seen her smile before.

We left the library and went through the door to the living area and to the right of the door was a staircase that went up to the second floor. There was a beautiful banister and railing by the stairs made of curly maple. The banister and railing had been sanded smooth and polished until it glowed.

## Carolyn's Journal

"That is a beautiful banister and railing. There has been a lot of work done on it to bring it up to that high of a luster," remarked mother.

"I went to America on business when I was renovating this house. I saw this piece of wood lying in a scrap heap. I asked how much they wanted for it. The owner looked at me and said, "You can have it if you want it, but I want you to know that it's good for nothing. The most you will get out of that piece of wood is the heat from the fire it's in!"

"I asked no more questions and hired some men to put it on my yacht. When I returned to England I hired a carpenter who could see the beauty in the wood to make it into this banister and railing. He planed and sanded until I was about to think the fellow in America was right. The carpenter brought it into the house and placed it on the stairway where you see it now. He worked on it some more after he got it up. That is a beautiful piece of curly Maple."

"You mean to tell me that this piece of beautiful wood was rejected by its owner and you were able to get it to look like this?" questioned mother.

"That is about the size of it."

"That is so pretty that it seems a shame to even think about sliding it."

The Baron looked at me and remarked with a grin on his face, "I'll bet you do that too if you get a chance."

I just looked at him and smiled.

The upstairs was a series of bed chambers. Each one was of moderate size and had a canopy bed in them. Each one had a chifferobe for clothes, a chiffonier and a small wash stand with a pitcher of water and a wash basin. There was also a chair and a screen in each room not to mention the all important chamber pot.

When we came to the center bed chamber, the Baron explained, "This is the bridal chamber. It is out of the back of this room that the crystal staircase emerges."

This is a chamber about twice the size of the other chambers. There was a trundle bed in it that was about twice the size of the others. I sat on the edge of the bed and sank way down. This was certainly no corn shuck or straw mattress!

I questioned the Baron, "How do you get them so soft. Do you blow them up with air or something?"

The Baron looked at me and laughed, "Almost! Those are stuffed with chicken feathers and goose down. They hold a lot of air."

The Baron looked at me and asked, "Would you do me a favor?"

"Not if it means that I have to marry you!"

"I promise that you will not have to marry me. After you ladies have selected your bed chambers, I am going down to the ball room. I will yell up for you to come down the crystal staircase. I want to see you on it."

"Very well, I'll come down it for you."

"May I come down it too?" Aggy asked. "If you ask me I'll marry you!"

"I'm sorry, Aggy. I only ask one pretty lady to marry me at a time. You may come down after Carolyn if you wish."

## Carolyn's Journal

We staked our claims to the bed chambers we wanted and the Baron went down to the ball room. In a moment he yelled up for me to come down. I opened the door in the back of the bed chamber and stepped out onto the crystal staircase. I walked like I had that book on my head as I came down the staircase. He looked at me as I came down and murmured to himself something to the effect that he thanked God for showing him his future wife. He just mumbled and murmured over and over again. When I neared the bottom step he said aloud so I could hear, "Thank-you Lord! You have shown me my future wife! Thank-you."

I looked at him, "Don't you thank God for me! I haven't said yes and I don't intend to unless I feel differently."

"The Lord brought you to me and He can change your mind!"

"That maybe so, but from where I am, it looks like it will certainly take divine intervention!"

The Baron never saw Aggy come down the staircase. The Baron was so wrapped up in seeing me come down that he completely forgot about poor Aggy. I could see that Aggy was upset about it so I went over to her and embraced her and told her how sorry I was that the Baron hadn't seen her. Mother came over and said that she had seen Aggy come down the staircase and she was pretty also. Aggy got to feeling some better.

We stayed in England for the rest of the week. During that week I did all kinds of things to try and discourage the Baron. He was like a mixed up hound dog. He had the right scent, but the wrong tree!

One evening the baker had made a beautiful cake and it was sitting close to me. I picked it up and slammed it into the Barons face. I really had to laugh because he looked so funny. He hadn't expected me to do that.

He looked at me through the cake and said, "Now you will have to lick it off!"

"I will not!"

"Then I shall have to kiss you to get it off."

"You wouldn't dare!" I moved my chair as far away from him as it would go and leaned away from him. He leaned toward me and being taller I discovered that I had not gotten far enough away and he kissed me on the cheek. As he did, he rubbed his face on my cheek so I had some of the cake on my face now. He looked at me and laughed and I laughed at him. Aggy sat in her chair watching all of this. With a solemn face she said, "I was really planning on having some of that cake!"

I reached over and took some of the cake from the Baron's face and smeared it on Aggy's face.

Aggy laughed and said, "Thanks Carolyn, but that wasn't quite the way I intended!"

Mother got up from the table and left the room. Aggy and I noticed this and immediately stopped what we were doing. This was always a signal to Aggy and me that mother had been disappointed in our actions and a scolding was imminent.

## Carolyn's Journal

After we had cleaned up the mess, we all went to our bed chambers to retire. Mother had already gone to hers. The Baron walked me to mine with Aggy on our heels.

As I had feared, mother came in for a chat, so she could scold me for my actions at the table.

"I don't know what is wrong with you Carolyn. You are acting completely different from what you usually do. I don't know what to expect from you next!"

"Mother, I think this was all planned by a couple of match makers we both know. I have been trying to change the Baron's mind by making him think I am too childish to be his wife. He claims to be madly in love with me. I am not convinced a man can fall madly in love with someone he has just met and knows nothing about."

"It happens all the time! It happened with your father and me and we have been in love ever since."

"It did? You never told me that before. If that is a possibility then why am I not in love with him?"

"I don't know, dear."

"No matter what, I just don't feel anything I could call love for him. Why doesn't he love Aggy? She says that she loves him."

"I have no idea."

"I'll do better now, mother."

"You better because all you do makes him love you more."

Mother went back to her bed chamber and I did my evening exercises. I then slipped on my nightgown and crawled into bed.

A night gown is a loose fitting gown similar to a dress. It is made of cotton for summer wear or flannel for winter.

The men wear a night shirt. It is similar to a night gown except the lower hem is scalloped like a shirt tail. The longest part usually falls between the knee and the ankle. They are made of the same material as the night gown.

The men have a night cap they wear on their head. It is of the same material as the night shirt. The cap is pointed with a fuzzy ball at the point. There is usually some kind of embroidery work on the headband.

The Ladies have a frilly cap they can wear if they desire. I have a night gown that mother and I made for me when I was thirteen. When I reached fifteen it has crept up from the floor and is tighter around the waist. The neck line is entirely too low. Mother and I talked about making a new one, but we decided that this one would do for a while because no one was going to see me in it. The only place I wear it is to bed.

I had just nicely gotten to sleep when I heard a knock on my door. I went to see who it might be. It was mother! She was leaning on the door frame and looking very pale. She could hardly breathe!

I helped her in and put her into my bed. I then aroused Aggy for her to watch mother until I found the Baron for help in getting a doctor. Aggy came into my room immediately and I went searching rooms until I found the Baron.

## Carolyn's Journal

I aroused the Baron and told him that I needed a doctor right away. I was really frightened about mother. I had never seen her like this.

The Baron sent one of the servants to fetch the doctor. The Baron and I hurried back to my room to see how mother was. We were both in our night clothes and hadn't paid any attention to it for we were concerned about mother.

We arrived at my room only to find mother sitting on the edge of the bed dangling her feet over the edge.

"What are you doing, mother? You are very sick and the Baron has sent for the doctor. You lie right back down until the doctor gets here."

"Aggy, you were supposed to be watching over her while I went for the Baron."

"Carolyn, you know mother. She insisted that she was all right and wouldn't lie down for me." Mother has done so many things for Aggy that she calls her mother.

"I'm all right now, Carolyn. Don't be hard on Aggy. I guess that I was just a little over tired is all."

"I doubt that you are all right. You lie down until the doctor arrives. I insist upon that! We'll let him decide if you are all right."

"You are being foolish besides that you all better get something on before the doctor arrives."

Aggy ran to her room and the Baron went to his room. I stayed in my room and slipped on a dress. Mother was lying in the bed, so I pulled the covers up over her.

In a moment or two, Aggy returned as did the Baron. The Baron never came into my bed chamber. He always played the part of a gentleman.

The doctor soon came and checked mother. He was very thorough. Mother was upset about the whole episode. She was certain she was all right and would be from then on.

Aggy and I left the room so the doctor could examine mother. When he was through, he stepped out into the hallway to ask me some questions.

"How did she appear to you when she was at your door?" "She was very pale, leaning on the door frame and having difficulty breathing. She really frightened me. I thought she was going to die!"

"She almost did! If you hadn't made her lie down when you did, she probably would have died! She has a very serious heart problem that she must have been keeping secret from you. She told me that she had spells like this before. I suggest that you make certain she does not receive any sudden surprises or that she doesn't get overly tired. She can live a normal life if you do that."

"We will take good care of her, won't we Carolyn?" Aggy assured.

"We certainly will take good care of her."

"I am leaving you some pills to give her if she has another spell. They will help her get better faster. I think you have everything under control now, so I will leave."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Do you think we should go back to America and cancel the rest of our trip?"

"You can continue your trip. Just watch her close."

The doctor left. Aggy went back to her room and the Baron left for his.

I went into my room and closed the door. My bed was big enough for two to sleep easily, so I told mother, "I want you to stay with me the rest of the night, mother. I want to make certain that you are fine."

"Nonsense, child! I am fine. I can surely sleep in my own bed!"

"Please, mother. When I was a little girl and I became frightened by a thunder storm or 'teeny dark', who lived under my bed, you would always come into my room and sleep with me. Now it is my turn to watch over you. Just sleep with me the rest of the night. You scared me silly tonight!"

"Very well, honey. Just for the rest of tonight."

After this incident, the Baron began doing nice things for me. He bought me flowers. He bought me jewelry. He hired a seamstress to sew some dresses for me. He did all the nice things a lady could want. This went on for the rest of the time we were in Europe.

I stopped doing the ugly things I had been doing to him. I still did silly things like slide the banister, but nothing as bad as I had before.

One morning Aggy and I left the table for our rooms. We freshened up in our rooms and got ready for the day. Aggy finished first and went down to find mother. She found mother on the porch looking at the weekly paper.

I picked up my broad-brimmed hat and was trying to decide how I should wear my hair. I decided to put it up in a ball on the back of my head. I wound my hair up and then put on my hat. I started out the door and the Baron was standing there waiting for me to leave so he could escort me. He startled me. I thought that he had gone down long ago.

I suggested that we race down the stairs and see who could win. I said, "We will start on the count of three. ONE---TWO ---THREE." He started running the stairs and I sat on the railing and slid down. Of course I was down first. I headed for the front door on a run as he puffed behind me yelling that I had cheated.

I ran out onto the porch with the Baron closing in on me shouting, "You cheated! Wait until I get my hands on you!"

Mother was reading the paper and looked up long enough to see him chasing me and asked, "What have you two been up to now?"

"We were to race down the stairs and I beat him."

"She did but she cheated. We were to race and she slid the railing. I call that cheating. " Having made these remarks he came over to where I was and pulled my hat down over my eyes.

"If everyone is ready, tomorrow morning we will leave for Prussia." The Baron informed us through his puffing from having chased me.

I grabbed the Baron by his hand and said, "Come on big boy, let's go for a walk in the gardens. I want to see them before we leave."

As we walked through the gardens with Aggy tagging along behind, I noticed things about him that I had never thought to notice about a man before. I

## Carolyn's Journal

noticed his hands, his eyes and how gray they were, the way he walked, how he spoke in a Prussian-English accent and the sandy brown color of his hair.

Mother looked at me as we returned and said "It looks like our time here has been well spent."

I looked at her and asked, "Whatever do you mean, mother?"

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Three THE PRUSSIAN DISAPPOINTMENT

The next morning we left England for Prussia. The Baron had a motor-sail boat which allowed us to cross the North Sea with some speed.

The Baron let me steer the boat for a while as we crossed and when I tired of it I came back to the stern where Aggy and mother were.

Aggy asked, "Do you think he will let me steer some?"

"I'm sure he will. Just go and ask him."

Aggy went to ask and this gave Mother and me a chance to chat without Aggy around.

"While we are in Prussia, do you think the Baron will let us have a buggy or carriage so you and I can go see my parents-your grandparents? I haven't seen them for sixteen years and they have never seen you. While I am this close I would like to see them."

"I think he would be happy to let us have a carriage or buggy. He may even want to go along."

"I want you to ask him because he is not likely to refuse you."

"I would like to see my grandparents. I have never seen any until now. Father's parents are both gone, rest their souls, so the only grandparents I have are on your side of the family."

"You will love your grandmother. She can be quite humorous at times."

Our private conversation stopped here as we could see the coast of Holland and Belgium. We entered the Rhine River and sailed to Coblenz. There we docked and took a coach to the Baron's home.

The Baron's home in Prussia turned out to be a huge castle. In his castle we met his mother, Herta. She was the lady in the portrait back in England. She seemed to be a bit confused by the Baron bringing three ladies home.

The castle was a huge building of large hewed rocks laid one upon another. The entrance which probably had a bridge going over some kind of barrier to keep the enemy out was high with an arch on the top. The reason for the height was so knights could ride their horses into the castle.

His castle has towers, spires and parapets. It is truly a fairy tale castle!

Strange as it may seem the inside is laid out exactly like the mansion in England. The only difference being that this is on a grander scale. It gives you the feeling that some giant must live here. Similar to the giant in the story of Jack and the Beanstalk.

The Baron told me that he had the mansion made like the castle so when they moved from one place to the other there would be less confusion.

The castle is beautiful inside and you can almost feel the presence of some of the Baron's ancestors. I could easily feel like Cinderella or Lady Guinevere.

## Carolyn's Journal

"While we're in Prussia," he announced to all of us, "I am going to have a Ball in Carolyn's honor!" He had new ball gowns made for us. They were expensive and beautiful gowns. He just couldn't be nice enough to me.

The night of the ball he announced me as "The Most Beautiful Lady in the World and hopefully his future bride."

The unknown side of Mother came to light while we were at the castle. Mother promised to tell all when we returned to England. Herta seemed to figure in this also.

Aggy and I could hardly wait to hear this story.

I asked the Baron if mother and I might borrow a buggy so we could go to her home while we were in Prussia.

The Baron looked at me and scolded, "Surely you know me better than that by now! All you have to do is tell me when and where you are going and ask me if I want to tag along. You don't have to ask me for permission to go."

"Do you have anything planned for tomorrow? That is when we would like to go."

"Tomorrow is fine. We will all go and I know that mother wants to go too because that is her hometown also."

"We will do it tomorrow then." I stretched up to the Baron and kissed his cheek. He looked surprised, but just smiled.

I located Mother and told her we would go tomorrow and everyone was going.

The next morning after breakfast the coach was at the door. We all scurried to attend to last minute details and then boarded the coach.

I sat next to the Baron on one side and Aggy sat on the other side. Herta and mother sat on the opposite seat facing us. I was holding the Baron's hand as we rode along. Aggy could have held his other hand, but didn't for some unknown reason. Herta and mother told stories of their childhood. Some were humorous and some sad. All of them typical stories of childhood. They just took place in a different time.

We were soon in front of Mother's home place. Mother hurried off the coach and went to the door and knocked. No answer. She knocked again and this time a set of eyes appeared in the window peeping out at her.

The door flew open. This lovable creature came flying out of the house and grabbed Mother in a hug and kissed her cheek. She just kept hugging and kissing mother and mother responded the same way. They were really happy to see one another.

In a few moments, Mother said, "Mother, you remember my girl friend Herta, and this beautiful young lady is your granddaughter, Carolyn."

Grandmother hugged me and gave me a big kiss on the cheek. Then she told Mother, "Your husband must be handsome because she is too beautiful to be yours!" We all laughed at Grandmother.

"This other lady is Carolyn's friend, Agatha. We all call her Aggy for short." Grandmother hugged Aggy and kissed her cheek.

## Carolyn's Journal

"She is pretty too!"

"The man you see . . . "

Grandmother cut in, "Don't tell me. I know him! His likeness has been in the paper. He is Baron Von Ribbonauff. Is he better than his worthless father?"

"Mother! He is Herta's son and the one you don't like was her husband. We are staying as guests at their castle."

"I'm sorry if I hurt your feelings, Herta, but your husband wasn't much good when he was drunk."

"Truth is truth and you can't get around it. Earl is like his father when his father was sober. Earl doesn't drink nor does he allow spirits on the property, " remarked Herta.

"That certainly is wise, " Grandmother commented.

"May we come in Mother? I would at least like the neighbors to have to guess as to what is going on. "

"You folks must forgive me for my poor manners. I have been here so long by myself that I don't remember how to act around other people."

"You mean that father is gone?"

"Yes, dear. He passed away six years ago. He died suddenly in his sleep."

"I was afraid that both of you might be gone."

"Carolyn and Aggy, you may be all grown up now, but I would like to have the chance to spoil you at least a little bit. I understand that is what grandmothers are for."

"Would you like to come with us to the castle and visit some more?"asked Herta.

"I will be happy to go. I have always wanted to investigate an old castle-a real castle. That should give Carolyn, Aggy and me something to do as we get acquainted."

"You two can call me Gramma. That is the best sound I ever heard and I thought I would never get to hear it from my grandchild."

"Can you leave your place for a while, or will you need someone to care for it?" asked Mother.

"I will only need someone if I am going to be gone for a long period of time."

"I am hoping you will come with us back to England and then on to America so you can meet Richard."

"I would like that, but I couldn't possibly be gone that long! I will go with you to the castle and maybe another time I'll go on to America."

"Whatever pleases you, mother. Are you ready to go to the castle?"

"I will be ready as soon as I can pack a few things. How long will I be gone?"

Everyone looked at Earl and he suggested, "Plan for a week's stay."

"While you are packing, mother, the rest of us will go over and look at Herta's home place."

"That sounds like a good idea." Remarked Herta who was anxious to see her old home.

## Carolyn's Journal

They all took off for Herta's place and left me with Gramma. I chatted with Gramma as she packed.

"What was Grampa like?" I asked. "Was he like you?"

"Heavens no, child. We were in love, but we were different. He was handsome. He never drank and was a church going man. He loved the Lord and tried to abide by His teachings. He had a problem with his heart that finally got him. I miss him so! I don't know why the Good Lord leaves me here. I'm looking forward to going home."

"I don't know the mind of God, but he has something more for you to do."

"Yes, I know." Gramma took the corner of her apron and dabbed her eyes and then said, "He just has a little more dusting for me to do."

I laughed at Gramma and then she smiled and laughed.

"Mother has a problem with her heart. I didn't know until a week ago when she nearly died."

"She must have gotten that from her father. Was the doctor able to give you anything for her?"

"Yes, he did. I keep it in case she needs it, but I am not always going to be around her and that worries me."

"When the Lord made each of us, he gave us a time that we will be on earth. When that time is up, you aren't going to be able to stop it and you can't hurry it up. It all takes place in God's own good time. Those pills will help Hilda, but if her time is up, you can give them all to her and they won't help!"

"I hear the others coming back. They all sound happy about something."

Mother came in first and reported, "Carolyn, you should see Herta's home place. They have made it into a huge mansion! Herta didn't even recognize it."

"Hilda, they have changed it so much that it is not the same house."

"They came through the whole neighborhood wanting to buy our properties. They planned to have that big mansion and all of our properties would be the grounds for the mansion. No one would sell. Where would we go if we sold? They got your property from the estate sale."

"I'm glad you didn't sell, mother. I never would have found you. Things have changed so much around here," remarked Mother.

"I'm all packed and ready, are the rest of you? I want to get started at spoiling my granddaughters and investigating that castle!"

We all boarded the coach and headed back to the castle. When we arrived, it was getting toward evening. Herta showed Gramma her room. The rest went to their rooms to freshen up for dinner and then went to the dining hall. I went back to Gramma's room to see if I might help her in some way.

"May I help you in some way, Gramma?"

"No, honey. I'm doing fine. I'm looking forward to sliding that big banister. Would you like to do it with me?"

"I'd love to Gramma. I like sliding banisters, but Mother always reprimands me. She says it is not ladylike."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Oh push-tosh! I'm going to slide it and I suppose I'm not Gramma like! If you see something that you want to do and it won't put you in danger of Hell's fire, I say do it. We only come this way once."

We went out into the hall and Gramma lifted her skirt, sat on the banister and slid to the floor below. I followed.

Mother just looked and said, "Now we have two of them! I see you two have more in common than I thought!"

"We see things more alike, mother. I am just sorry that I didn't have the chance to know her a long time ago. We are going to have fun together."

"All three of us are going to have fun together," reminded Aggy.

"I was afraid of that. Now the rest of us won't see any peace," Mother chuckled.

"We won't be that bad! I've got a lot of spoiling to do and I intend to do what I can toward that end. I want to be a good Gramma to Aggy and Carolyn."

"I'm for that", agreed Aggy.

Meanwhile, I played no more tricks on the Baron. Mother noticed this and told me that it began to look like I was falling in love with the Baron.

I told her, "No way mother! We just called a truce."

Aggy, Gramma and I explored the castle for the next few days. We went into the towers. We went into the dungeon where we almost expected to see bones of dead prisoners. We really did enjoy that.

After we had taken Gramma back to her home, Herta and the rest of us headed back to England.

The next morning as I stepped out of my room to go to breakfast there was the Baron waiting to escort me to the dining hall. This escorting business was being done every morning as I began the day and in the evening as I retired. The Baron seemed to be obsessed with treating me kindly and showing his manners.

After breakfast, we all went into the living room to hear Mother's and Herta's stories. The Baron insisted that I sit on the love seat with him.

Mother began. "When I was a young girl growing up in Prussia, I had a very close and dear friend. We shared all of our little girl secrets. That friend was Herta."

"When I was eight years old, my mother and father paid for me to take harp lessons. They hoped that this would be a way for me to perhaps marry a nobleman when I was old enough. I had real talent for the harp and at the age of twelve I was playing for the crowned heads of Europe. They dubbed me the World's Greatest Harpist. I was in demand all over Europe after that."

"There was a young man from Prussia, a Baron, who fell madly in love with me. He followed me everywhere I went. He sent me flowers before my concerts. He seemed like a wonderful man, but as I found out later, he had a problem. He drank to excess and gambled."

One evening after a performance, he convinced me to go with him without a chaperone. I was fifteen and impetuous, so I sneaked off with him. He started drinking and gambling."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I had bought a string of pearls to wear around my neck as I played at concerts. I had forgotten to take them off that evening and he took them from my neck and gambled them away. He stole and lost my pearls that night. I left him that night and never saw him again."

"I never told my mother until one day a local pawn broker called her aside to verify some pearls that had come into his possession. Mother looked at them and saw my initials on the clasp. She came home angry and asked me questions, so I told her the story."

"You lost those pearls fair and square, " Mother informed me, "so you will not buy them back! You should know by now that if a man will not court proper, he is not worth having!"

"When I was sixteen, I got a booking for concerts in Philadelphia and Boston. I was thrilled to get to go to America. I played two weeks in Philadelphia and then went to Boston. All the audiences were great. While I played in Boston, there was a man in the audience that I thought was the handsomest man I had ever seen. I found myself hoping that he would come up after the concert and talk to me. The next night he did come up and we soon discovered that we were both in love. It was a case of love at first sight. When my concert tour was over Richard and I had a small, quiet wedding. I dropped out of sight. I never went back to Prussia or to my parents. I didn't dare even write to my parents for fear of revealing my whereabouts. I missed my parents. I loved them very much, but I was in love with Richard and I wanted to be with him, not traveling across Europe away from him."

"One day I got careless and a friend found me. I swore him to secrecy and he promised to get a message to my parents so they wouldn't worry."

"You never told me any of this before, Mother. I am really proud to be the daughter of the World's Greatest Harpist. I love you, Mother, and I think you are the best. I went over to Mother and gave her a big hug and a kiss on the cheek."

"Your mother and father got the message from your friend and were happy for you. They were heart broken that they could not meet your husband and play with their grandchildren when they came along." Herta stated.

" Now I have something to tell also. I found a man on a bench in a park near my home. He was almost frozen and had been drinking. I took him home and thawed him out and sobered him up. We got to talking and he told me who he was. I didn't believe him until he took me to the castle. It was Earl's father. He drank to excess and gambled. When he was sober, he was like Earl. He proposed to me one night when he was sober and I accepted. I soon found that he had another problem. When he was drunk, he would beat me for no reason. When he sobered up he told me how sorry he was for beating me and promised to never do it again, but he did."

"I tried to avoid him when he was drunk and be with him when he was sober. Those sober times became fewer and fewer. I was soon with child and Earl was born. For a while Karl quit drinking and gambling. One evening he went back to his old ways."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Earl and I restricted the amount of money Karl could have from the castle fund, so he would take things from the castle and pawn them to get enough money to drink and gamble. I quietly went to the pawn shops and bought back all that he pawned. One day he had pawned some things and noticed a string of pearls. He looked at the pearls and then used the money he had gotten from pawning things to buy those pearls. He brought them back to show me and explain about them. He instructed me to be certain to give them to Hilda if I ever saw her again."

Herta handed the pearls to Mother and asked, "Would you please look at these and see if they are your pearls?"

Mother looked at the pearls and then looked at the clasp. There on that clasp were her initials. "These are mine! I haven't seen these since I was fifteen!"

Herta continued her story, "Karl began to get worse. One day the workmen found him lying on the edge of a field clutching his god - his bottle. He was dead. We buried him in the family cemetery. All this has made a lasting impression on Earl to where he allows no spirits to be used at the castle or mansion. Anyone caught with any is shown the road home!"

"I never knew how you met Father and married. I did know that he beat you when he was drunk. You would always make excuses for your bruises. I love you, Mother, and I am proud of you for sticking it out with Father to the end." Earl gave his mother a big hug and a kiss on the cheek.

"Isn't it peculiar how your paths have crossed after all these years? It has to be the hand of God. If your father hadn't gambled mother's pearls away that night, you and I might have been brother and sister!"

"Then I couldn't marry you! I am happy the way it is."

"I'm not! If you two were brother and sister, then I would have a chance to marry the Baron." Aggy remarked.

"We will be having another ball here honoring Carolyn. I want to lend her something. If you will close your eyes, Carolyn and not open them until I tell you, I will show you. Now don't peek!" directed Herta.

I obediently closed my eyes wondering what she could possibly have to loan me. I couldn't curb my curiosity so I peeked a little. Herta brought out her jewelry box. She fished around a minute in her box and then pulled out a necklace that was truly old. It had a gold chain with a triangular fob that held a large diamond in the center surrounded by several smaller diamonds. She held it up in front of me and then said, "You may open your eyes now."

I opened my eyes and saw that beautiful necklace. "It's lovely, Herta. Are you certain you want me to wear that?"

"I am! Earl, would you fasten it around her neck?" Earl got up and moved behind me. He brought the necklace up in front of my neck and I lifted my hair so he could fasten the necklace around my neck.

"It was made especially for you!" commented Herta.

"I agree, Herta. It is gorgeous on her!" Mother confirmed.

## Carolyn's Journal

"That isn't all. I want you to wear this tiara also. It goes with the necklace." Herta pulled a tiara from her jewelry box and placed it on my head. The front of the tiara was triangular with a setting of jewels similar to the necklace. The base of the tiara was of silver which made it glitter more.

"How do you think your daughter looks now?" requested Herta.

"You have gilded the lily, Herta! Words can't describe this. Go look in a mirror, Carolyn."

I got up and looked in a mirror. I came back sad and said, "If I wear this to the ball, I will have to marry Earl won't I?"

"No dear. I just think you look gorgeous with these on and I want you to look your very best because you are my best friend's daughter. You won't have to marry Earl. That will be your choice, not mine. I really don't know how he could do any better."

"Thank you!" I hugged Herta and kissed her cheek. "I will be happy to wear them for you, Herta. Now do you have something for Aggy?"

"I was coming to that. How would this necklace suit you, Aggy?" She pulled another necklace out and handed it to Earl to put on Aggy. Earl put the necklace down in front of Aggy. She lifted her hair and Earl fastened the necklace around her neck. Aggy pulled his hand up to her mouth and kissed it.

"They are you! They set off your good looks too. Go look in the mirror," commented Herta.

Aggy went to the mirror and a big smile came on her face. She really hadn't expected anything because all of the attention had been on me. Aggy went over to Herta and gave her a big hug and a kiss on the cheek.

On the morning of the ball at breakfast I announced to all that I would marry Earl. Earl jumped up from his seat and requested, "Would you repeat that so I am sure of what you said?"

"I said that I have decided that God would have me marry you. The answer to your proposal is, as bad as it was, I WILL MARRY YOU!"

Earl grabbed me by the hand and rushed me from the dinning hall into the stables. There Earl and a hand harnessed a horse and hitched it to a buggy. Earl helped me into the buggy, got in himself and whipped the horse into a gallop toward London.

I objected as we went. My hair wasn't brushed. I had no hat on. I wasn't dressed proper for going to London. We had no chaperone. I gave a thousand excuses, but none caused him to alter his course.

Earl kept the horse galloping toward London. He came to a stop in front of a jeweller's (Eng. spelling) shop. He helped me down and rushed me into the shop. He then asked the jeweller for the largest diamond ring he had. The jeweller disappeared and in a moment brought out a tray of rings. Earl looked at them and asked, "Don't you have anything bigger and better than these?"

"Let me go back and look again. The jeweller disappeared again and returned in a few moments with a single ring in a box. The diamond in this one was larger than the others.

## Carolyn's Journal

Earl looked it over carefully and finally said, "Now that is more like it. I want the very best for the Most Beautiful Lady in the World."

"I thought she looked familiar. Who is she engaged to?"

"To me, the luckiest fellow in the world!"

"I would say you certainly are. She is most beautiful."

It became most evident to me that this jeweller was either the world's biggest liar or blind as a bat! My hair wasn't brushed. I had on a work dress and I hadn't even had a chance to wash properly after breakfast. This fellow just had to be blind.

"Please hold your finger up so I can measure your finger for size."

Commanded the jeweller.

I held my finger up and he measured it. Then he measured the ring. The ring was too large and he would have to cut it to make it smaller to fit my finger.

The jeweller cut the ring and soon had it ready. The jeweller handed the ring to Earl. Earl slid the ring on my finger.

Earl signed some kind of paper and rushed me out the door to the buggy. He helped me into the buggy and then got in himself. He whipped the horse into a gallop for home. We arrived back at the mansion in time for lunch. I spent the time traveling just staring at that beautiful ring.

When we entered the front door Mother greeted us, furious with Earl for taking me off without a proper chaperone. Earl listened to Mother scold him and then he told her, "I wanted to get this ring before the ball this evening so I can announce her as my bride to be. I didn't have time to wait for a chaperone to get ready. I am sorry and I won't do that again."

"Your apology is accepted. Now I want to see that ring you bought my daughter!"

I held my hand out so they could all see the ring. They all oo'ed and awed over the ring. I was happy, but I noticed a funny look on Aggy's face.

That evening at the ball, I came down the crystal staircase after Earl announced me as the Most Beautiful Lady in the World and his future bride.

I was wearing the beautiful ball gown Earl had had sewn for me in Prussia, the tiara and beautiful necklace Herta had loaned me and my hair as Earl liked it. I felt the most beautiful item was the ring on my finger.

The chandeliers were all lit in the ball room. As I descended the staircase, it looked to all who observed that I had a halo over my head. It made me look like an angel, so I was told later. Everyone commented on how beautiful I was, This was one of the biggest moments of my life! I shall never forget the feeling of that moment.

In a few days, the three of us headed back to the states. When we had been to sea a few days, Mother called Aggy and I to the cabin to make plans for my wedding. Mother had made several suggestions when Aggy spoke up, "All that makes no difference for Carolyn will not marry the Baron! It is I who will share the love seat with him on cool, crisp evenings! It is I who will go down the crystal staircase! It is I who will sleep with him in the bridal chamber! It is I who

## Carolyn's Journal

will marry him! While Carolyn was playing games and 'hard to get', he slept with me and now I carry his child"

After Aggy had made these statements, she let out one of her loud cackles. Even the boat shuddered from it! Aggy had finally pulled the biggest and worst stunt of her life. I knew she had been planning something big. I just never suspected she would ruin herself to pull it off.

"You couldn't have! You wouldn't ruin yourself like that."

"I did and I'm glad I did. I got the prize and you get nothing!" Aggy sneered at me.

"You have ruined your life, the Baron's life and Carolyn's life. You may think you were smart for having done that, Aggy, but you are downright foolish!" Admonished Mother.

The rest of the voyage home was centered on me and Aggy was treated as a leper. When word got out about what Aggy had done, no one on the boat would have anything to do with her. The captain gave mother and me a new cabin so we would not have to share a cabin with Aggy.

When the boat docked in Boston, Father was waiting to take the three of us home.

Mother explained to Father what had taken place. Father went by Aggy's home first. He helped her off the coach and carried her trunk into the house. Bob suspected something was not right so he asked Father what had happened. Father only said, "Ask her, " and left for home with us.

The following month Earl showed up at my door. I looked at him with tears in my eyes and said, "You wanted Aggy and got her and now you can marry her. I don't want a man who will lie to me about how much he loves me and sleeps with my friend! I want to keep the ring and the ball gown. You can have all the rest back if you want it. I really fell in love with you. I don't see how you could have done this to me. You made me feel beautiful and you had all of those beautiful dresses made for me. Apparently you were trying to get me to sleep with you as you did Aggy. You, sir are a cad and are unfit to be married to me! I won't marry a liar." Having said this I left the parlor in tears and went to my bedroom.

Father had heard me and saw me leave the parlor in tears. He walked into the parlor and opened the door. He told Earl, "I think Aggy needs you. You better go to her."

Earl remarked, "I thought I would at least be allowed the chance to explain! Tell Carolyn she can have all I have given her and it was given in the spirit she accepted it." Having said that, Earl left for Aggy's.

I was in my room crying when I heard a voice. "Don't cry my child. You could not marry the Baron and do the work set out for you."

I looked all around and saw no one. I looked a second time. "Oh good, now I am hearing voices!"

A month after the Baron took Aggy back and married her, I heard a knock on the door. I answered it and there stood Féodore.

"Hello Féodore. This is a surprise. I thought I would never see you again."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I heard that you were in need of cheering up. I thought that I would try to cheer you up.

"I'm glad you came. I guess you heard what happened to Earl and me."

"Everyone in England knows what happened. They are all angry with him. No one will have anything to do with him. Uncle George is angry over it and the people have about isolated them to the mansion."

"They shouldn't be so hard on Earl. It was Aggy's fault. How is your uncle?"

"He is just fine and sends his best regards. He said to tell you that he can get you another Baron if you so desire!"

"That is very sweet of him but tell him no thanks. I am emotionally drained and am not interested in anyone at this time."

"I went to see Earl after he was married and asked him to tell me what happened. He told me it made little difference now. You wouldn't even let him tell his side of the story and he had to marry Aggy."

"I begged him to tell me his side of the story and he finally did. It is a lot different from what you heard and what is being told."

"It really doesn't make much difference now does it? He is married to Aggy. She is the one sleeping with him in the bridal chamber. She is the one coming down the crystal staircase. It is she who sits on the love seat next to h him." Tears came to my eyes as I said this.

"You have part of that wrong. He is married to Aggy, but she sleeps alone in her old bedroom. She is not allowed in the bridal chamber or to go down the crystal staircase. He won't let her sit on the love seat. He is pining for you and says that some day you will still be there with him. He says that he will wait as long as it takes. His plan now is to divorce Aggy after the baby is born."

"I'm beginning to believe that this is God's will. He has some work for me to do and I could not do it married to Earl. I'd like to think that anyway. It would make it easier to forgive Earl and Aggy."

"I wish you would give earl a chance to tell his side of the story some time."

"I would like to, but I am too emotionally upset with him at this time to face him. Did I show you all of the nice things he had made for me and gave me?"

Féodore and I looked at all of the things Earl had given me. The dresses, the jewelry and other things. As we looked at these things we talked about various things and I asked her if she thought that she might ever be the Queen of England.

"I don't expect I will. They are grooming my Half sister Vickie for that. I may get to be a queen somewhere, but at this time I have no idea where."

We had quite a long visit and Féodore said, "Time has gotten by me. I must leave now for an appointment I must keep. I hope I have cheered you some. If you ever marry, I would like to be one of your bride's maids. May I be?"

"If you want that, so be it. I'll get in touch if I do plan a wedding."

"Bye for now. Keep your chin up!"

"You have been a big help Féodore. Come and see me anytime."

## Carolyn's Journal

Féodore went out of the house and got into her buggy. She headed for Boston. Féodore had cheered me some and I thought that perhaps this closed the door on that chapter of my life.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Four MY KNIGHT IN SHINING ARMOR

I was in my room doing a little dusting and had my hair up in a bun and a dust cap on over it. Minnie, our maid, had given me a little apron and I was wearing it. Someone knocked on the door and I went to answer it.

Upon opening the door, I saw the handsomest man I have ever seen who asked in a strong Irish accent, "Would this be the home of one Richard Greene, now?"

I went 'gaga' and my heart did flip-flops and landed in my throat to where I couldn't speak.

He asked again, "Would this be the home of one Richard Greene, now?"

I managed to say, "Yes." I just stood there and gawked at him.

He looked at me and said, "You are beyond a doubt the most beautiful lady in the world!"

Father came out of the drawing room, saw the stranger standing in the door and said, "Bring him into the drawing room, Carolyn."

All I could do was gawk at him like a small child. I managed to get him to the drawing room and just stood gawking at him.

Father said, "You may leave now Carolyn!"

I just stood and gawked.

"You may leave!" Carolyn.

"Oh-Oh yes!" I started to leave and as I did I tripped over Father's foot stool. I fell flat on my face! This handsome stranger rushed over and helped me up. I was so embarrassed I ran out of the room and into my bedroom where I began to cry because I had been so clumsy. This was that magical kind of love I had heard about.

In a few minutes, Father came to my bedroom door and said, "Carolyn! I need to speak with you."

"Just a moment Father!" I washed my eyes with cool water and then went to the door.

"I can't get anything out of Joseph! He wants to talk to you. I think he wants to court you."

"I will see what he wants, Father." I went with Father back to the drawing room. Joseph was in there and he came to me, "I can't get my mind off you ever since I saw you at the door! Would you mind if I come to court you tomorrow evening at seven?"

"I certainly wouldn't mind! I'll be happy to see you tomorrow evening at seven."

"Now that we have that taken care of, do you think we can get to work now, Joseph?"

"Most certainly we can! I think I'm in love!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"You must be! My daughter seems to have the same problem. She never fell over my footstool before."

"Did I hear you say your daughter?"

"Yes, that is who she is and I am quite proud of her!"

"I thought she was your maid! She had on a maid's outfit. I'm sorry! I wouldn't have been so bold as to ask for the right to court her had I known she was your daughter!"

"She was doing some dusting in her room when she answered the door. I'm glad you asked her because she just had a bad experience with a man and her best friend. She has been moping in her room most of the time. I'm glad you came along."

"You are being kind! Shall we get to work now?"

Father and Joseph went to work on whatever they had been doing.

The next evening at seven sharp, the door knocker banged the door. I opened the door and there stood my handsome prince! He had on his best clothes. His hair was brushed neatly and he had a high starched collar around his neck that looked uncomfortable. He was really over dressed for the occasion, I thought. He really wanted to impress my parents and me. I love the idea that he thought enough of me to be uncomfortable! "Come in."

"I have a lot of nerve asking a beautiful lady like you to court. You must have many men friends who have more right to ask than I."

"Will you stop mumbling and come in? I wanted you to court me. If I had not wanted you to, I would have refused! I think you are handsome!"

"Thank you! I think you are beautiful, so I guess we are off to a good start." He laughed and I laughed. His laugh was beautiful. It was good to laugh again. This was the first time I had really laughed since the fiasco with Earl. At last I was feeling free of the problems with Aggy and Earl. They suddenly became a thing of the past.

We sat in the parlor with Mother and Father. Father looked at Joseph and asked, "Do you have any family?"

"No. My mother died when I was born and Father reared me by himself until I was twelve. It was then that my father decided to come to America. He hadn't been here long before he got into a brawl at the local pub. He was always doing that in Ireland. This time the one he was brawling with had a knife. He killed my father that night. I've been on my own ever since." "You certainly have had a hard time in your young life. How ever did you manage?"

"It hasn't been too bad. A man who worked for Watt on steam engines took me in and taught me a lot about engines. Because of his teaching, I am now able to work on steam engines by myself."

"You seem like a nice fellow. If you start courting my daughter, you will not take advantage of her and you certainly will be true to her. If you can't do that you may as well leave now."

"Sir, I would never take advantage of any young lady and I certainly will be true to her. I hope to someday win her hand in marriage! She is most beautiful."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Very well, if you are serious we will leave you with her for the rest of the evening."

"I can't do anything when I'm home alone for thinking of you. Would it be all right if I came calling on you tomorrow evening?"

"Yes. I feel we need to be together."

Mother spoke up and suggested, "Why don't you come for dinner tomorrow evening? That would be at six."

"I appreciate your offer for dinner, Ma'am, but I couldn't impose upon you like that!"

"Don't be silly! Minnie loves to cook. It is settled then. We will see you tomorrow evening at six." Mother and Father left the parlor. I'm sure they weren't far from us.

We sat in the parlor and chatted the rest of the evening. He was really a good man and I knew from the way I felt from the very first time I saw him at the door that he was meant to be my husband.

The time came up to nine o'clock and he stated, "I guess I better get on home. I don't want to wear out my welcome." He rose to go to the door and I followed him. I gave him a big hug and a kiss on the cheek.

"Thanks for a wonderful evening. That kiss is to make you want to come back tomorrow night." I laughed and he laughed.

"I'll be back tomorrow evening for dinner and you can be sure I am going to be thinking of you all the time I am gone."

He opened the door and went on home. Mother came into the parlor and demanded, "What do you mean by kissing that man?"

"I only kissed him on the cheek!"

"That is so, but you may give him the wrong idea about you. You watch your step young lady! You don't want to end up in a situation like Aggy!"

"You are the greatest mother. I'm lucky to have you. It is too bad Aggy's mother couldn't have lived to help her more."

"Aggy made a big mistake. She is paying for it now. The only problem is she has caused other people heartaches along with her. I am satisfied that you get out of life what you put in it. If you put in evil, you get out evil."

"I'm going to bed and dream sweet dreams tonight." I grinned.

"Be sure you keep your dreams separate from real life."

I smiled at Mother as I went to my bedroom and chuckled, "Good night, Mother."

Mother went to her bedroom. Father was already there and I could hear them discussing whether Joseph was good enough for me. I covered my ears with a pillow and went to sleep.

The next evening I had cleaned up, brushed my hair and put on a clean dress. When the door knocker sounded, I went to the door and there stood my five-foot eight knight in shining armor. I smiled at him and said, "Come in. Dinner is almost on the table."

"Dinner is served." Mother announced.

## Carolyn's Journal

I didn't eat much. I mostly sat and watched him eat. Every thing about him intrigued me.

He became a regular evening fixture at our house. It was almost like we were already married. He ate with us each evening and I worked on my culinary skills with Minnie and mother's help . I was getting quite good at cooking and loved to cook for him. He ate it and called it good even if I burned something.

At nine sharp each evening he would leave for home. He remarked, "If I stay longer, the neighbors will think I am up to no good."

Each evening as he came, he would hug me and kiss my cheek and then would do the same to Mother. Mother enjoyed this so much that each evening as he came to the door, she went with me to the door for her hug and kiss.

From the middle of October until we married this routine continued. Mother invited him to take Thanksgiving with us, being he had no family. I think sometimes that Mother had come to love him more than I did. She was always looking out for him. She hadn't wanted me to go with him at first, but she did change!

He was invited for Christmas dinner and Mother and I thought that he would propose marriage at Christmas. He didn't.

Mother and I were disappointed. He requested that he be allowed to come and celebrate New Year's eve with me until midnight. Mother and Father agreed providing they were present.

"Of course, " he agreed, "I want you to celebrate with us!" New Year's eve came and we were all sitting in the parlor waiting for midnight and the new year to arrive. At 11:55 exactly, Joseph got on his knees in front of me.

"Carolyn, you are special to me. I love you more each day. You are the most beautiful lady in the world and I am not worthy to even see you, much less court you. I am not a nobleman or noble bred. I am just an ordinary working man. I cannot give you everything you are accustomed to, but I can offer you my undying love, respect and a share in my meager life. Will you do me the honor of becoming my beautiful bride?"

I could hardly wait for him to finish before I answered him, "Yes! Yes! YES! You wonderful man!" With this he pulled a ring box from his pocket, took the ring out and placed it on my finger. The diamond was small, but I loved him and it looked as big, if not bigger than the one the Baron had given me.

I stood up and he stood up. I threw my arms around him and kissed him just as the clock struck twelve. "What a wonderful way to start the new year!" I commented.

"I'm glad you liked that." He was so happy that he was going around from Mother to Father and then me, hugging each of us as he went. I showed the ring to Mother and she was so happy for me that she hugged me. I showed the ring to Father and he hugged me. Then I said, "In this family we have a custom that before you can have me you have to ask Father for me."

Father remarked, "That was all taken care of this afternoon."

"You mean that you knew about this?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"That is right. We have already talked."

"You knew and didn't even give me a hint?"

"I have another surprise for you. When you are married, I'm making Joseph my first vice president in charge of my company!"

"That is wonderful news. That will mean that he no longer is a working man. He will be a business man."

Joseph saw how much I smiled and how happy I was. He just held my hand and watched me.

Mother said, "You know you can't be married until you are sixteen. I will make all of the plans. I want this to be a wedding as big or bigger than you would have had with the Baron. One thing, Father, I want to surface as the World's Greatest Harpist so I can play at the wedding - if you will let me." She looked at Father as she said this about surfacing.

Father looked at Mother and commented, "If you want to start that life again, it's fine with me. I didn't stop you the first time and I'll not stop you now."

"I can always say 'no' to any engagement I don't want to do."

"If this is what you want to do, do it."

Joseph questioned, "You are the world's greatest harpist? Is that the one who disappeared without a trace about sixteen years ago?"

"That's me! I did that to be with the man I love and to raise my family."

"I can't believe it! Two great people in the same house."

"Thank you for those kind words. Carolyn, we have to make plans for the wedding. I want this to be the biggest wedding Boston has ever had!"

"Can we tone it down a little bit, Mother?"

"We can, but the public won't let us. They will expect the biggest from The World's Greatest Harpist and The Most Beautiful Lady in the World. We will beyond a doubt have people come who are not invited, so we may as well make plans for them."

"I'm going to my place now and I will see you good folks tomorrow for lunch." Joseph was tired and ready for bed.

"We want you here for New Year's Dinner. Besides, I'll not be able to stand your being away longer." I embraced him and gave him a big kiss. He responded in like manner. It felt good to have his warm body close to me. He felt like a warm, cuddly puppy! I enjoyed that feeling.

After Joseph left, Mother said, "I figure a June wedding would be great."

"That is all right with me, just don't prolong it more than that or we may elope!"

"You better not! Let's go to bed now. We have time to talk about this later."

"I'm for that." I said. Father had already retired when Joseph left.

Mother sent out invitations in a few days to everyone we could think of. In a month she began to get replies to the invitations. Among those replies was a letter from Herta. She asked Mother if she might be allowed to come and help with the wedding and pay for part of it.

"What do you think, Carolyn?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I have always liked her, Mother. What Earl and Aggy did wasn't her fault. I say ask her to come by all means."

"I'm glad you feel that way." Mother sat right down and wrote Herta a note telling her to come post haste.

I interrupted Mother's thoughts and writing as I asked, "You did write to Gramma didn't you? If you haven't, then I will as you write to Herta."

"I wrote your Gramma."

"I was afraid that it had slipped your mind. I want her to come."

"I'm asking Herta if she would please see what she can do to help Mother get here."

"I love Gramma and I want her to be present for this wedding. She missed yours."

"She did miss mine, but I hope she won't miss yours. I'm certain she will be very happy to come to your wedding."

"Mother, I have forgotten something very important! I promised Féodore that she could be one of my bride's maids, if I ever got married. I'll have to get a letter off to her immediately and ask her if she will be a bride's maid."

"You better get that letter out. It will be a month before she gets it. I'm really proud of you. You are just a common young lady and royalty wants to be in your wedding!"

I sat and wrote the letter to Féodore. Just as I finished, someone knocked on the door. I went to the door and there stood Féodore!

"I was just writing you a letter. You must have known," I laughed.

"No, I didn't know, but I had received word from Herta that you were going to get married, so I had uncle bring me over on the royal yacht. That is one of the advantages of being royalty. You have many things at your command. Now I want to know all about this person you are marrying."

"Who is it, Carolyn?" Mother called.

"It is Féodore. You remember Féodore." (Fay-o-door)

"Oh, yes! She was wonderful to us while we were in England." Mother came to the parlor and said, "Welcome to our humble home, Féodore. We don't have much, but what we have is at your disposal."

"I'll be staying with friends, so you won't have to worry about getting me a place to stay."

"You are most welcome here."

"I know that I am, but I think it will be better if I board elsewhere. I guess that you know that royalty all over the world is planning on coming to hear your mother play again."

"How did they find that out?" I asked.

"It either came from your grandmother or Herta. The papers in Europe are printing anything they can get about you two and the wedding."

"Oh for goodness sakes! We better get this information to our paper or he will be upset about getting it from Europe. You better go to the paper and notify him now." Mother remarked.

## Carolyn's Journal

"Are you certain that you want to come out of hiding, Mother?"

"I have to so you can have the biggest and best wedding That ought to help make up for the hurt Aggy has caused you."

"Mother, you have always taught me that the Bible says: 'Vengeance is mine, sayeth the Lord'."

"You are right, Carolyn, but I just want to nudge Him a little!"

"From what I hear and see, Mrs. Greene, You won't have to worry about the size of it. It will be bigger than you want, I'm afraid. You may have to do some things you don't want because of the royalty who are coming." Remarked Féodore.

"What do you mean?" asked Mother.

"If some of the princesses find out that I am to be a bride's maid, they will want to be one also."

"Why is that?" I asked.

"They will feel that they are as good as I am. If they think you have snubbed them - not that you really would, but if they think so - they could make an international incident out of it."

"How can we take care of that problem?"

"I can give you the names of the princesses that are old enough to be asked. You can write and ask them if they would serve you that way. If they refuse, all is well. If they accept, then you should take them. Of course I could always turn down your request and then you wouldn't have any of that trouble."

"I want you as a bridesmaid, Féodore. I wouldn't think of leaving you out, no matter what the cost!"

"You better go to the newspaper first. Féodore can go with you and the two of you can chat on your way to and from the paper." Mother suggested.

"That is a good idea, Mrs. Greene. When we get back, I'll help write the letters of invitation and give you the names and addresses of those who should be invited."

"I appreciate your help on that, Féodore."

Féodore and I rode in her buggy to the paper We walked in and asked, "How do we put an announcement in the paper about an engagement and wedding?"

"That would be with me." He looked at me and at Féodore. I had my hat on with my hair in a bun under it.

"Both of you look familiar. Let me think. Yes, now I have it. You are The Most Beautiful Lady in the World and you are Princess Féodore from England!"

"You are right on both counts. Now see if you can keep it under your hat about our being here! I want to announce my engagement and coming wedding. If you are a quiet fellow, I will tell you that The World's Greatest Harpist is coming out of hiding to play at my wedding!"

"That is a really big story. I suppose that the Princess is here for your wedding?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I certainly am! I wouldn't miss my best friend's wedding." Remarked Féodore. I gave the editor a card with my address on it. I told him, "If you will come to that address, we will tell you all that you want to know. "

We turned to leave and people were lined up outside looking in the window and blocking the door. They were staring at us. I said, "Excuse us please. We have to get home."

I looked at Féodore and laughed, "We are going to have to do better than this if we travel incognito. "

When Féodore saw the side of the buggy, she laughed also. "Here we are trying to be inconspicuous and there is the royal crest on the side of the buggy broadcasting who we are!"

I deliberately took the long way home so Féodore and I could talk and get reacquainted.

After arriving home and giving the information to the paper, Féodore left in her buggy and promised to return the next day to help with the letters to the other princesses.

When the paper came out the story was accurate and well done.

Féodore came and helped me with the letters as she had promised. We got the letters in the post and then I spent the rest of the day talking to Féodore.

Time passed quickly and before I realized it, Herta and Gramma arrived. We all hugged and kissed them on the cheek. Even Joseph did and they fell in love with him immediately. Herta commented, "You keep that up and I will take you away from Carolyn!"

Inga exclaimed, "I'll take you anytime!"

Herta commented, "You did well in getting him, Carolyn. He is a lot better catch than that stuffy son of mine!"

"Amen to that!" put in Gramma.

"May I call you Mother Herta?"

"Certainly! That is what you would have been calling me had Earl not gone crazy."

"You can call me Gramma, Carolyn."

"Gramma, I love you and if it hadn't been for Earl I might never have gotten to know you. Mother Herta, that was God's will. He had no choice in the matter. God wanted me to marry Joseph."

"You are sweet to look at it that way. I still would love to have you for a daughter-in-law. Your mother has reared you well."

"She is more than sweet. She is my wonderful, beautiful granddaughter."

"Gramma, you don't have to worry. I still love you and will talk with you. You don't have to make those remarks to get my attention. You are my very own Gramma and I love you dearly."

"I'll wait my turn after this, just for you, Carolyn."

"I have something I brought for you. It would have been yours had you married Earl. Let me get it before I forget it." Herta disappeared into her room and returned with something in a silk kerchief. She handed me the kerchief and I

## Carolyn's Journal

opened it. There was that beautiful necklace she had let me wear to the ball in England!

"Mother Herta! Are you certain you want to do this? This is an heirloom!"

"I certainly do. Let me fasten it around your neck so Joseph can see how beautiful you are with it on. If you wear this at your wedding, you will have 'something old' taken care of. What do you think, Joseph?"

"That surely does make her more beautiful! Thank you, Mother Herta." Joseph hugged Herta and kissed her on the cheek!

"You keep that up! You are so handsome and thoughtful. I see why she loves you."

"Carolyn, I wanted to bring you something, but I couldn't get enough money together to buy dirt! I didn't have anything nice enough for you in the house so I just couldn't get you anything." Gramma commented with tears in her eyes.

I noticed this so I went over to Gramma and put my arm around her shoulders. "Gramma, I didn't expect you to. I just wanted you to be here to see me get married. You got cheated out of seeing Mother's wedding. I'm very happy to just have you here. By coming you have brought me the best gift I could ever want!"

"I wouldn't even have been able to come if Herta hadn't hired a man to come and care for my place. It is awful to get old and have very little money to live on!"

"Mother, I want to talk to you about that sometime while you are here. I believe I can help your situation," remarked Mother.

"I don't want a dole and I'm not leaving home!"

"You are jumping to conclusions, Mother. Wait until you hear what I have to say."

"I am waiting, but I want you to know where I stand before you begin."

All three mothers worked on wedding plans. The information was in the papers and people were writing to us wanting to know if they could come. This wedding was mushrooming into a colossal giant.

Mother began to get requests for her to play from all over Europe. She also got one from the group she had played for last in Boston.

We also got responses from some princesses saying they did not know me well enough to be a bridesmaid. This gave me a chance to get the ones I had already planned to have. As it turned out, only two of the princesses I had asked agreed to come. They turned out to be very nice ladies and very pretty. They really didn't care about the wedding as much as they wanted to be seen by eligible bachelors in the royal line. They picked the right place, for they were noticed by several available princes.

Gifts began to arrive daily. They came from people I had never heard from or seen. I didn't know them from Adam's house cat. These were fine expensive gifts.

I told my three mothers, "I don't understand this. Why would anyone I don't know send me a gift and I'm certain they don't know me?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"They were ready for a big wedding with you and Earl. When Earl pulled his little stunt, they were going to make certain you got gifts and a big wedding when you did marry" said Herta.

"Do you mean that they are getting revenge?"

"No dear. They just want to show Earl and Aggy that they are not the only cookies in the jar." Clarified Gramma.

"I have to go for the last fitting of the gown. I'll pay for that and go by and pay some other bills. Unless someone wants to come along, I'll see you all later."

"I'll go with you Carolyn." Gramma was up and ready to go with me. We went for the dress fitting.

"So this is where you grew up."

"In this area, yes. I grew up out at the farm and in school. Mother was hiding so we never went anywhere."

"It is a shame that your mother chose to hide instead of just telling them she was quitting. Because she didn't, you were cheated out of a grandfather and almost a grandmother."

"That is true, but I guess Mother knew what she was doing. Besides it was God's will!"

"I love the way you look at things, Carolyn."

"It is the only way. If you let things bother you, you will go crazy."

"That is why I like your outlook. You always look on the positive side."

"Thank you, Gramma."

I went by the school I had attended for so many years. "This is the Common School I attended. I graduated from there with honors."

"Mother made me go to Finishing School in Salem. The head mistress was a Mrs. Smith. She had ankle length red hair and kept it braided in a conical coil on the back of her head. She also had a long skinny nose. The red hair on the back of her head and the long skinny nose reminded me of a red headed wood pecker." I laughed.

Gramma looked at me, "Really?"

"Yes, Gramma. She was a very nice lady, but I couldn't help thinking of her as a woodpecker."

"When you have something to do that you don't like, find a laugh in it and then do it."

"Gramma, you are the best!" I hugged her.

"Thank you, Carolyn, but I doubt that you have the background to judge if I am the best Gramma."

"I think you are and that is all that counts."

"I'll accept that!"

Plans moved ahead for the wedding. It was getting bigger and bigger. It promised to be the biggest wedding Boston ever had! It was growing every minute and the harbor was cluttered with royal yachts and other yachts. Things were getting out of control!

## Carolyn's Journal

The day of the wedding came. Mother and Gramma had worked on my hair all afternoon. They helped me get my wedding gown on. It was a beautiful gown. I thought that it was the prettiest I had ever seen. The necklace that Herta had given me set it off. The gown made me look and feel beautiful. I was excited, happy and in love.

Mother, Gramma and Mother Herta got into their gowns. In a few moments Mother went into the church to play the harp. When Mother entered the church, the guests all stood and applauded. Mother curtsied and then sat at the harp.

The organist played several pre-ceremony tunes with Mother. Then Mother played a couple of tunes solo. The guests applauded.

I was peeping out of the door at the top of the stairs I would have to come down. The music continued and the minister came down the aisle and took his place. Then came the groom and the best man. I saw Joseph all dressed up and I thought he was the handsomest man I had ever seen.

In a moment the flower girl and boy came down the aisle scattering rose petals as they came. The bride's maids came in next as Mother played. Then came the wedding march. My entrance! The guests all stood and faced the rear toward me. Father took my arm and walked me to the altar. I walked like I had that book on my head-straight and proud! I heard remarks about how beautiful I was. That made me feel good!

We got to the altar and the minister said, "We have gathered together to join Mr. Joseph O'Deigh (pronounced O'Day) and Miss Carolyn Greene in Holy Matrimony. Who gives this lady to be joined in this way?"

Father responded, "I, her father, do." Father then stepped back and took a seat next to Mother. Joseph stepped up beside me in Father's place. I looked at him and smiled. I was happy.

I didn't really hear much of what was said by the minister in the service. I said my 'I do's' in the right place - I think. Then I heard him say, "If any man knows of any reason these two should not be joined in Holy Wedlock, let him speak now or forever hold his peace!"

I held my breath for fear some idiot would speak up! No one did. Then the minister announced, "By the powers vested in me by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, I hereby pronounce you man and wife. What God has joined together let no man put asunder. You may kiss the bride."

Joseph took his big hands and lifted my veil and kissed me.

The minister had us turn and face the guests. "Ladies and gentlemen may I present to you Mr. and Mrs. Joseph O'Deigh!" I thought that a most lovely sound. The guests applauded and stood for the recessional. Joseph and I walked to a room in the back of the church and waited for all the guests to leave.

After the guests had departed, Joseph and I had to go back to the front of the church for an artist to sketch us. This sketch would be made into a portrait of our wedding and presented to us later.

It took about thirty minutes for the sketch to be made. After the sketch was made, we went on to the reception hall. Mother had moved her harp from the

## Carolyn's Journal

church to the reception hall and was playing softly. Almost all of the guests were listening to her play.

We went directly to the front of the reception line and greeted guests. Several of royalty were present. There were Kings and Queens, viscounts, princesses, princes, dukes and duchesses, lords and ladies, Earls, Barons and baronesses. With all of the blue-bloods present, one could easily have come to the conclusion that some person of royalty was being married.

Joseph bowed and I curtsied to those of royalty. Although it was our wedding we had to show the proper respect.

Féodore came through the line with the king. I told the king I was happy he could be here. The king responded, "I'm happy to be invited to a large wedding that was not a royal wedding."

After all the guests had gone through the reception line, Mother Herta tried to count heads. It was impossible with people moving about freely.

Joseph and I went to the huge wedding cake to cut it. The cake was made in tiers and there were seven tiers. We cut two pieces out of the bottom tier. I was hungry and the cake tasted good. I fed Joseph a piece of cake and Joseph fed me a piece of cake.

"That tasted good, Joseph. I could stand another one!"

He looked at me and cautioned, "Better not. That will make you fat!"

I laughed with him.

We needed to open the gifts. There were so many that I told the guests that I would open a selected few now and open the rest later. I assured them that a proper thank you would be sent to all of them. "If I open all of them now, I'll miss my honeymoon!" They all laughed and snickered. We opened the selected gifts.

There was a dance and the first dance was for the bride and her father. The second dance for the bride and the groom. Then we went to our room to change our clothes. We changed to street clothes and then made a dash through a shower of rice to our buggy. Someone had put a big sign on the back of the buggy "Just married" in big letters.

I threw the bridal bouquet into the group of young ladies waiting in a group for that purpose. Féodore caught it! I looked at her and smiled. According to tradition, she would be the next to get married.

We drove off to our honeymoon cottage a friend of Father's had graciously lent us for the week. The scenery was beautiful, but we didn't see much of it.

The week was gone before we knew it. I was more deeply in love with Joseph than before. He was a wonderful man. So gentle and kind. How could I have ever thought that I was in love with Earl. Surely God had not intended for me to marry Earl!

I put my arm around Joseph as we started home. I squeezed him up to me tight.

"Darling."

"Yes, dear."

"Would you let up on your hug a little? I'm having trouble breathing!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"We have been married a week and already you don't want me to hug you." I teased.

"You know better, honey! I just asked you to loosen up, not let go."

I loosened my hug and asked, "Is that better?"

"Yes, thank you." He leaned down and kissed me on the forehead.

"What's the matter with the lips?"

"I couldn't reach them!"

I stretched up and he leaned down and kissed me on the lips. I kissed him back. By now the horse had its own head.

I suggested, "The horse knows his way home, why don't we just sit and hug and kiss all the way home."

"What would people think if they drove by?"

"Who cares? I love you." I shouted out to the hills about us, "I love my husband very, very much and I want the world to know it!" The hills echoed back.

Joseph laughed at me and said, "You are a little bit crazy at times. Do you know that?"

"I'm crazy in love with you! Now you do it."

Joseph shouted, "I love my beautiful wife and I want the world to know it!" Again the hills echoed back.

We both laughed and kissed some more. We hadn't noticed, but the horse having its own head had quickened the pace and we were back to Boston before we realized it. Arriving in Boston meant that we had to stop being silly and act like a lady and a gentleman.

We pulled up to Joseph's place and he got out. Then he helped me out of the buggy. I took Joseph by the arm and we went to the front door. Joseph unlocked the door, opened it, turned and picked me up and carried me across the threshold and into the house. He put me down on my feet.

"Thank you, Mr. O'Deigh."

"My pleasure, Mrs. O'Deigh."

Joseph and I unpacked and then went to my parent's place so they would know we had gotten back safely.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Five OFF TO OHIO

Mother and Father were happy to see us. Féodore, Mother Herta and Gramma were still there and glad to see us.

Father and Joseph went into the drawing room to talk and the rest of us went into the living room. I went over and gave Mother, Herta, Gramma and Féodore a big hug and a kiss on the cheek.

Gramma asked, "Is married life what you expected?"

"Joseph is such a wonderful man! I could never be any happier than I am now. When are all of you going to have to leave?"

"I must leave tomorrow. My uncle is getting impatient about being away from home so long. He says he doesn't want the people over there to think that they can get along without him."

"Inga and I must leave day after tomorrow. Our boat is leaving then."

"We better get our chatting done now or we will have to write several long letters." I commented. We all sat and chatted most of that day.

The next morning I went to Boston Harbor to watch Féodore and the royal yacht leave. That was a sight to behold, the big yacht hoisting anchor, turning and leaving the harbor. I was sorry to see Féodore leave. She has begun to be like a sister to me, something I never had.

I went home and chatted with Mother Herta and Gramma the rest of the day. I was really saddened to learn that Aggy had tried to give birth and had died in the effort along with the baby. Mother Herta didn't want to tell me until after the honeymoon. She was afraid being told would ruin my wedding and honeymoon. She didn't want Aggy or the Baron messing up the happiest day of my life. I really appreciated her for that.

The day came for Mother Herta and Gramma to leave. They packed their things and Father and Joseph loaded the trunks and bags on a coach.

We all boarded the coach and drove to the wharf in Boston Harbor. Mother Herta and Gramma assured us they would return soon. Joseph and Father saw to the luggage as Mother and I walked Mother Herta and Gramma onto the boat.

It had been wonderful having them both to the wedding and now it was sad having to say good bye. Mother had tears in her eyes. Father had never seen Gramma before, but he fell in love with her. He came to appreciate Herta. She was such a nice person

As we rode home, I noticed that Joseph wasn't his usual self. He seemed to be dreaming.

When we arrived home and Joseph and I were alone, he told me the disturbing news. We were going to have to relocate to Ohio so he could work at an iron furnace installing and operating a steam engine.

"Why can't you go, put in the engine and come back?"

"I can't because your father wants me to be on site. He has put a lot of money in one called Pine Grove and he wants the two of us to move there. We

## Carolyn's Journal

are supposed to get a mansion house to live in. It sounds really good to me. I think we will like it there."

"That's way back in the wilderness! I hope they don't have Indians who will scalp me!" I nervously laughed.

"I don't think they do, but if they looked at you, they would want all of you for a squaw! You are so beautiful! I think you would make a good Indian squaw!" he teased.

"Whatever you want, dear. I married you for better or for worse and I guess Father is providing us with the worse now."

"What has happened to your usual positive self? You usually think of things like this as being God's Will!"

"I'm sorry, honey. I guess this is God's Will. We shall go and face it together."

"We will be traveling by wagon and take as many things as we can with us. The rest of our things will be shipped. We will probably be on the road a full month or longer."

Father and Joseph went to work making a wagon for us. They said that they didn't trust what they might get if they bought one-- especially if it were used. This was going to take us longer to get ready, but it gave mother and me time to get all the things we were going to take separated from those things to be shipped.

Father bought some new shipping barrels and mother and I began wrapping all the dishes we had gotten as gifts at our wedding in old rags mother had been saving. We put a layer of sawdust and shavings from father's shop in the bottom of the barrel, one layer of dishes and sawdust to cover them. More dishes were placed on top of that and more sawdust and shavings. This was slow going, but I didn't want to find all my new dishes broken when I got them.

Father and Joseph found some lumber that father had stacked to dry and started making our 'special' wagon. Our wagon would be twelve feet long, six feet wide and four feet deep. It would be a heavy wagon and would take four horses to pull it. Father and Joseph worked long and hard on our wagon and when it was done, it would be able to withstand the journey to southern Ohio.

The wagon was high off the ground, so they had put a set of fold-up steps on the side for me to get onto and off of the wagon. I thought that rather ingenious of them. The cargo box came straight up and then out over the top of the wheels. This section over the top of the wheels had a section of drawers and little cupboards. The drawers were just big enough for one plate and there were two of them. The little cupboards were just big enough for one cup and there were two of them. There was one drawer that had four compartments in it. One compartment for two spoons, one compartment for two forks, one compartment for two knives and the last compartment was for serving spoons.

There was an indentation of the cargo box in the very back of the wagon. They had put that there to haul a small cook stove they either had made or found

## Carolyn's Journal

for me to cook on as I can not cook over a campfire. These two were very thoughtful!

When I discovered these two items just for me, I went over and gave father a big kiss on the cheek and the same for Joseph. They looked at me surprised.

"What was that all about?" Joseph asked as he reached around me with a big hug.

"You two are being so thoughtful and doing things that are for my comfort. I just wanted to show you that I certainly do appreciate it."

"Thank you, but maybe you ought to wait until you see all of the things we are doing just to please you." Joseph was quite pleased with being able to do things to please me! I just couldn't help but love that man all the more.

When the wagon was finished I went onto it to see what all they had done for me. There were several little things like the little cabinets, but one big thing was that the floor behind the only seat was made a special size so a mattress could fit in there for us to sleep on. Perhaps the biggest thing was that this wagon would have a convertible cover. Bows would go into special sockets on the side of the wagon and we could ride in the wagon under the shade of the cover. When we were in a place where the cover wasn't needed, such as in the forest, we could take the cover down and take the bows off. The bows would store on top of the cargo in the back and the canvas was made so that it would fold three times and fasten on both sides over the top of the cargo holding the bows in place and keeping the cargo safe from the elements. Now I thought that was very clever! It only took ten minutes to put the cover up or take it down. Another thing I thought to be very clever was that the cargo box was all sealed so water would not get in either as we traveled or from fording a stream. They had even put a drain hole in the bottom so if water did get in it could be gotten out easily. Mother and I couldn't help but admire our two ingenious men!

Mother and I found out later that our two ingenious men had gone wild while painting the wagon. They had painted it with splotches of tan, black and green! We asked them why the odd colors. They looked at us surprised, "So it cannot be seen easily in the woods."

Mother and I said no more because they had put so many nice things on the wagon just for me.

One thing that was very important to take was a gun to hunt with, should we need to. Of course we needed plenty of water to drink and to cook. A barrel was acquired for that purpose and a place for it on the side of the wagon. We took a two and one half gallon barrel of milk to drink and use for cooking. We planned to stop at farms along the way and buy more milk when we needed it. The road was extremely bumpy and rough and the cream in the milk churned to butter as we went. At least we had buttermilk to drink and butter for our biscuits!

The fellows had made bins for flour and for the potatoes. They had a small bin for apples, but after we had eaten the apples out that were in it we put onions in it.

## Carolyn's Journal

The night before we were to do our final packing of the wagon, I came out to say goodbye to my animal friends. The two chipmunks came up to me with a hazelnut apiece they had saved through the winter. Next came fluffy with a chestnut she had saved through the winter. Then the rabbit came with a carrot he had swiped from the garden. The last of the animals to come was grumpy the woodchuck. He brought a potato he had raided from the garden.

I said goodbye to all of them and told them that someday soon I hoped to be back and see them all again. I picked each one up and kissed it on the head. When I picked old grumpy up, he squirmed and tried to get away. He didn't like any of that sentimental mush! I kissed his head anyway. I got up to go back to the house with tears in my eyes. They had been such wonderful friends to me all these years and now they had brought little gifts because I was leaving them! I put the things they had brought into the wagon, turned and waved bye to them as I left for the house.

The next morning we finished our packing and prepared to start out. Mother was fussing at Father for sending us out to Ohio. I wasn't feeling too good about it either. I love my husband and I have to go where he goes, like Ruth in the Bible. This would prove to be an experience I would never forget or regret!

We all had breakfast and I said a tearful good bye to Minnie. Then I hugged Mother and kissed her cheek. Joseph followed suit. I hugged and kissed Father on the cheek. We climbed onto the wagon and started out. I didn't dare look back. I knew that Mother was crying. Joseph said later that they were both daubing their eyes.

Our travel plans were to go from Boston to Albany. From Albany west on the road cut by the military during the War of 1812 to Dunkirk. At Dunkirk we would turn south to Fort Pitt. There we would catch the Ohio River and travel by flatboat to Union Landing.

I had never been out of the Boston area by land, so this was an all new experience for me.

In places the road went through huge stands of trees. Some of them must have been hundreds of years old. Moss was growing on their trunks. Some had flowers growing on their trunks and their trunks were huge! In some places the tops of the trees seemed to be woven together with vines of various kinds. I could see why the Indians wanted them left alone! These trees formed a kind of canopy over us as we traveled. Even the rays of the sun did not reach us. It was a little like being in a long dark tunnel that stretched for miles. Everywhere roads crossed, there was a small village.

We had traveled almost to Albany when we approached a wagon that seemed to be having trouble. We pulled up to see if we could help. Joseph asked, "Are you needing help?"

The man from the wagon came over to where we were and with a smile on his face introduced himself, "Hi! I'm Nehemiah and that, he pointed toward a woman sitting on the wagon, is my beautiful wife. The children you see are ours."

## Carolyn's Journal

There were six children running about playing. It wasn't hard to tell that she was with child again. I got down from our wagon and went over to talk to the Mrs.

I arrived over at the other wagon and introduced myself. "I'm Mrs. Carolyn O'Deigh. We are heading to the Ohio frontier. How are you feeling?"

"I'm Mrs. Armenia Seymore and I'm not feeling too good just now."

"Do you know where you are going?"

"Nehemiah bought a farm out near the middle of New York State. I don't know why I couldn't have been like that young lady they wrote up in the paper."

"What young lady was that?"

"It was in the Boston paper. The young lady that was going to marry some Baron or other and wound up marrying a common worker. She had what must have been a wedding that put royal weddings to shame! According to the paper."

"Why in the world would you want to be like her?"

"I would have married that Baron and never had to work another day in my life!"

She didn't know that she was talking to the very one she was talking about, so I told her, "Money isn't everything. I think it is important that there be love, trust and respect in a marriage. If they are not present, there is only a union of a man and a woman."

Nehemiah came over to where we were and said, "Thanks to Joseph here, the wagon wheel is patched to where we can move on now. Joseph thinks it would be best for us to travel together so if we have more trouble, we can have his help."

"That sounds good to me."

"How can I thank you folks or show you my gratitude?"

"We don't expect you to. We believe that God intended for people to help and love one another," remarked Joseph.

We all got on our wagons and headed for Albany. As we traveled together, Armenia's children wanted to ride on our wagon. Joseph and I were happy to have their company. I would talk to them about different things. I mentioned how beautiful the forests were. One of them replied, "When Pa gets a chance, it will all be cut down so he can farm!"

There were two things I never told any of them. I never told how the animals come up to me and I never told Armenia that I was the one she wished she was.

When we got to Albany, they decided to stay over until they could get their wheel fixed proper. We told them that we would have to push on so we could get to our destination as soon as possible.

We all said our good byes. I hugged each of the children. I also hugged and kissed Armenia on the cheek. I whispered in her ear as I hugged her, "You and your husband will love your new farm."

"I hope you are right about that!"

We moved our wagon on through town and on to a road going west. There was a problem. Joseph had picked up the wrong road and we were headed into

## Carolyn's Journal

the heart of Pennsylvania! We discovered this before too long and got on the right road. There were few signs showing roads, so this was easy to do. One had to know where north was and go from there.

That evening when we stopped for the night, Joseph got our little stove down. I fried him some ham and potatoes with onions. We ate that meal like a couple of pigs. We hadn't bothered to have a cooked meal since leaving home. We had snacked on whatever we could. We had been drinking milk most of the time. The cooked meal really tasted good.

After we had eaten and the dishes were washed, we sat beside the road. As we sat there, the animals began to come up to me. I hadn't told Joseph about this and he was surprised. He reached down and picked up a rabbit and began to pet it.

"I've never been able to do this before, How come I can now?"

"Because you are with me. I have been able to do this ever since I can remember."

"Do you have any more secrets you haven't told me?"

"I don't know of any. I just forgot about this."

The land was getting rougher and the hills were getting higher. Sometimes I walked with Joseph alongside the wagon to make it a little lighter for the horses to pull.

We got into a bad rainstorm one time. Being in the early summer we encountered several rainstorms, but this one was the worst. The wagon got stuck in a ford we had to make. Joseph whipped the horses and I pushed from behind. Joseph was upset that I had pushed, but we would still be there if I hadn't.

"If you had said you would help, I would have let you drive the horses as I did the pushing!" Exploded Joseph.

"That is fine with me, darling. After this you push and I drive!"

One time when I was not watching Joseph, he got his rifle from the wagon and went to a field that had a group of deer feeding in it and shot one. It was a buck and it made me angry that he would shoot that buck.

I told him how disappointed I was in him.

He looked at me surprised, "I thought that you would be proud of me. I brought you back a lot of fresh meat to cook and eat. We need some. We will be getting scurvy from not eating like we should!"

"I'm sorry honey and you are right I should be proud of you for getting that big buck. You are right again, we do need fresh meat. The problem is that I have been friends with the animals so long that I cannot stand to see one killed."

"I shouldn't have barked at you. I guess if I had grown up like you have I would not want one killed either. I will find a tree and clean him. We will have to put him in the wagon on top of the load. Do we have something we can lay him on? I don't want to get blood all over the things we are hauling?"

"I don't know of a thing except the canvas top."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I don't want to get blood all over that! As we go down the roads with the top up, people are going to feel sure we have killed someone. Maybe I can cut it into small enough pieces that I can wrap it in his own hide. I will just have to see."

Unbeknownst to both of us, we were being watched very closely. Joseph went to skin the deer out and cut the pieces up into sizes we could use. He hunted for a tree with a limb that he could throw a rope over and pull the deer up by the hind feet so he could skin it. He found one and was about to pull the deer up when some Indians stepped up to him and asked if they could help for a little of the meat. Joseph looked at them and told them that he would go ask his wife about it.

Joseph came back to me and one of the Indians came with him. The Indian looked at me, said something in his dialect and the others came to where I was. They all got down on their knees in front of me and the head one apologized to me for wanting some of our meat. He said that the deer had been shot on their land and they did not know that the Great White Princess had need of it. They asked my forgiveness and would be glad to help in cleaning the deer.

"You are forgiven and you may have some of the meat as we will not be able to eat all of it before it spoils." The Indians left with Joseph and showed him how the Indians skinned, cleaned and cut up a deer so it did not bleed and betray them to the wolves and bears. It was quite different from our way and it did not bleed on anything we had in the wagon. We wound up giving them half of the meat. They refused at first and when I told them we would be offended if they did not take it. They finally agreed to take it.

Needless to say I told Joseph that I hoped he had learned a lesson about using his gun.

"I guess you are right on that. You won't mind if I use it to protect us, will you?"

"Not in the least."

Another day we were traveling down a slope and a huge tree was lying across the roadway. Joseph just got the horses stopped in time. Joseph went into the wagon and brought out the axe.

"Joseph, that tree is so big we will be here till fall trying to cut through it. Wouldn't it be better to maybe cut the trunk loose from the stump to where you can hitch a team to it and pull it aside enough for us to get through?"

"I guess it is worth a try, honey. It certainly will take a long time cutting through the trunk with this axe."

This plan worked enough to let us through. It was a good idea, I thought. Joseph was upset that we had lost so much time. This would put us another day getting to Dunkirk.

That evening as we were pulled over to the side of the road and were putting the bows in place so we could put the top up, two strangers in a wagon stopped and asked if they could help us. They got down off of their wagon with guns and told us just to back away from our wagon as they intended to take it. They had their guns pointed at us, so Joseph and I were not going to argue with

## Carolyn's Journal

them. The wagon and what few goods we had in it wasn't worth either of our lives. We did as instructed and just as we did a couple of large wolves jumped out of no where and attacked those two unsuspecting men. There were twelve wolves in all and they each took a turn at those two men.

These two men dropped their guns and tried to make it to their wagon. They never did. There just were too many wolves after them. Those two men will never bother anyone else. After the wolves had killed both men, they left the bodies lay where they had dropped and ran off into the woods.

Joseph picked up their guns and put them in their wagon. He and I picked up the bodies and put them in their wagon. Joseph tied the reins to the whip and then cracked the horses so they would go on home, wherever that might be. The wolves had all come up by me and were looking for me to pet them like a group of dogs.

"I believe that I would like to make friends with them,too. They saved our lives just now." Joseph remarked.

"Why don't we give them some of that deer meet? They would love it and it is beginning to spoil some."

"After they saved our lives I'd give them anything we have that they want!"

Joseph got up on the wagon and handed me chunks of meat and I took my butcher knife and cut it into pieces big enough for the wolves to each have a piece. "Eat nice and act nice." I told the wolves.

I gave each one a piece of meat and they carried it off and ate it quietly.

Joseph looked at me, "You certainly do have a way with animals! What do you do, mesmerize them some way?"

"No dear, I have no idea how I can do that, but I thank God that I can. If I couldn't do this, we would not be here now! The Indians would have killed us back there for shooting one of their deer.

We finished putting the top up and felt quite safe knowing that we were being guarded by a wolf pack. The next morning we ate our usual breakfast and gave the wolves smaller pieces of deer meat and left that area. I waved good bye to the wolves.

Two mornings before we were to arrive in Dunkirk, I started to get out of the wagon and get breakfast. I heard a noise outside the wagon. I looked and there was a mother bear and her cub rummaging around. I woke Joseph and exclaimed, "There is a bear and her cub out there!"

Joseph, half asleep, asked, "Why don't you go out there and pet her?"

I started to get out of the wagon and Joseph grabbed my arm. "I was kidding you."

"I'll try honey. If she comes after me, I'll run back to the wagon and you can shoot her."

"That sounds like a good plan. Let me get my gun." His gun wasn't what one would call a bear gun, but if the shot were placed in the right spot, it might stop a bear.

## Carolyn's Journal

I stepped off the wagon and when the bear saw me, she came lumbering up to me and rubbed my legs like a big dog. I stood there and petted her and then the cub came up also. Joseph climbed down from the wagon and started petting the cub. Joseph bragged on what a nice cub that was. I believe that mother bear would have smiled if she could have. After a while the mother bear grunted and headed for the woods with her cub following.

After breakfast we headed out. This proved to be a most miserable day. It rained all day off and on. Most of the time it just sprinkled rain. This was enough to keep everything wet all day. Father had gotten us a couple of New England fisherman rain coats and hats somewhere. We certainly needed them. Joseph had waterproofed his shoes before we started. Father had made me a new pair of high button-up shoes before we left. He had put some kind of soft fur in the inside and had waterproofed them for me. I certainly did need them this day! I raised my skirt at the waist to where my ankles were showing. When Joseph saw this he almost had a fit!

"What are people going to think of you?"

"Honey, just stop and think. How many people have we seen as we have traveled in the last two days? Besides that if we do meet someone, I will duck behind the wagon and let my skirt down before they can see me."

"I guess that will work out all right."

I slogged along in the mud beside Joseph all day. When I saw the rain was going to keep on, I suggested to Joseph that we stop and take the rest of the day off and give the horses a rest. We weren't able to make much distance anyway.

"I want to go as far as we can and besides the weather is cooler for the horses."

Needles to say, we slogged and slid on.

Joseph had not been his usual happy self. Something was bothering him so I asked, "Joseph, is there something wrong with you? You are not your usual self."

"I'm all right. I am a bit worried though."

"About what? The animals won't hurt you as long as you are with me."

"That isn't it, honey. I wasn't going to tell you, but I guess I better so you can prepare yourself in case something does happen."

"Don't keep me in suspense, Joseph. You should have told me a long time ago apparently. We are not supposed to keep secrets from one another!" I scolded.

"I didn't want to worry you. They told me back in Albany that I should be on the lookout when we get close to Dunkirk. It seems that there are highwaymen who stop the wagons and take over the wagon. They kill the owners and family. The women are mistreated badly. The children, if there are any, are also killed. There have been reports almost daily about this. The reports say that it is happening on all roads into Dunkirk."

"I don't think we have to worry. I think that was the two back there."

"You are probably right. I guess we don't have to worry about that."

## Carolyn's Journal

Even though we had agreed that we had already been attacked by the highway men, the thought still crossed both of our minds whether we actually had or if we were yet to be held up. We had left the wolves way back and whether other animals would protect us, we had no idea . I could tell that Joseph was thinking the same things I was and was upset by them.

We ate dinner in silence and after we had finished and the dishes were washed, we heard a noise in a patch of berry bushes at the edge of the clearing. Joseph grabbed his gun and crawled under the wagon behind the front wheel. I grabbed a steel rod I used for poking the fire in the stove. I stood by the stove. We were ready to make our stand! We probably looked foolish to others, but we felt better.

The bushes beside the road moved and rattled.

My heart was pounding so hard I believe if it had pounded harder it would have frightened whatever or whoever it was away. Whatever it was, was coming straight for us. It apparently wasn't afraid, but I was! My poker was waving back and forth from my nerves.

In a moment a black figure emerged from the bushes. It was a welcome sight. It was the mother black bear and her cub that we had petted that morning or two just like them. She and her cub came up to us and we petted them again, relieved from all that excitement. They didn't leave this time. They just laid down by the wagon like two big dogs! They were there for the duration. They had come to protect us!

We went to bed that evening feeling safe. God had sent us these two as our protectors. Who would dare try anything with two bears lying nearby? We slept soundly that night.

The next morning we got up feeling very refreshed. The bears were still there. The mother bear on one side and the cub on the other side of the wagon. One might think that the cub would be little or no help, but he weighed about 150 pounds with sharp claws and teeth and he knows how to use them!

We ate our breakfast and headed for Dunkirk. We should get there around noon or a little after. The mother bear and her cub left for the woods. I had a feeling all day that they were not far from us. It was not raining this day and we could and did make better mileage. Joseph and I rode in the wagon some today. It was good to ride and not have to walk.

We came into Dunkirk and the townspeople gathered around and walked beside our wagon. They were eager for news from the east.

When we stopped the wagon, the townspeople looked at our wagon.

Someone said, "That is one of the nicest looking wagons I have ever seen. Who made it for you?"

Joseph was always proud to tell people that he and his father-in-law made this wagon.

One fellow told Joseph, " I sure do like your wagon, but I sure don't like the paint job!" Joseph looked a little upset over that remark, but said nothing about it. I just grinned.

## Carolyn's Journal

" We have to get some things, where is your general store?"

Someone gave us directions to the general store which if we had looked we could have seen it by ourselves. I guess those people thought we were as blind as bats!

We drove on to the general store and went in. I went to the women's section. There were some women in there and they wanted to know what had been taking place in Boston.

"The biggest thing I know of was the big wedding they had. It was as big as any royal wedding and it was attended by royalty from all over." I told them all about my wedding and never told them that it was Joseph's and my wedding. Some of the ladies sat there with tears in their eyes when I finished.

One lady looked at me and said, "That must have been a beautiful wedding. I always dreamed of having a wedding like that, but when I got married it was just the two of us, two witnesses and the preacher."

"Yeah, Stelly, I think every girl dreams of a fairy tale wedding like that."

"I would just liked to have been a mouse in the church so I could have seen that wedding." Another woman added.

"May I ask you ladies something?"

"Go ahead, we may not be able to answer, but you can surely ask."

"Do you people have animals that you can pet that are wild?"

"Not that I know of. Why?"

"A bear has been following us and protecting us for two days. We could even pet it and her cub. Is that common in these parts?"

There had been an old Indian sitting in a chair by the stove. When he heard this, he came to where I was. He came close and looked at my hair. I have been wearing my hair braided and down my back. He looked at my eyes and skin.

One woman spoke up, "That is unusual. We are a bit odd here, but not that odd. Joe, will you leave her alone. Pay no attention to old Joe. He is harmless."

"I'm not afraid of him."

"You pet wild animals that protect you. You have long black hair, blue eyes and are white. You have to be the Great White Indian Princess my people look for!" Old Joe remarked.

"I feel a good story coming on, Joe. Are you going to tell us one?" Queried one of the women.

"I have told you things before and you did not believe me. This story you can believe."

"I'll be the judge of that when I have heard it, " Stelly remarked.

Old Joe began, "There used to be a small tribe of Indians living on the coast of what you now call Virginia. The chief had a very beautiful daughter. He was very proud of her. One of the white settlers took her for his squah. He took her over the big waters. She became very sick and wanted to come home to Virginia and her father. She died and her father was very sad at the outcome. That evening he was assured by the Great Spirit that another princess would come to the Indians. She would be the Great White Indian Princess. He was told that she

## Carolyn's Journal

would be white with black hair and blue eyes. She would be protected by the animals she pets and she would be traveling through the forest with her husband in a wagon when discovered. She will bring peace to those tribes who will follow her teachings."

"That is quite a tale, Joe. It must have taken you a long time to think that one up!"

"It is not a tale. It is the truth. You better not make any threatening moves toward her or the animals that protect her will kill you."

"Come on, Joe you know better."

"It is true!" One of the ladies could have chosen to test him on this, but none did. If they had chosen to have tested his statement, I am not certain what would have happened, but from past experience I know someone would have gotten hurt. I was glad they had enough sense to not test Old Joe.

Joseph had finished purchasing our needs and came to where I was. "Are you ready to go?"

"Anytime you are, honey. Joe here was just telling me that I am the Great White Indian Princess they have been waiting for."

Joseph looked at me and remarked, "Do you believe that?"

Joe requested that he be allowed to come with us. Joseph looked at him and replied, "Certainly you may come. You can help us find a suitable place to stay tonight."

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Six THE JOURNEY

Old Joe, Joseph and I got onto the wagon and started down the road. We found a good spot to pull off the road. It was wide enough for the wagon to pull completely off the road and there was plenty of grass for the horses and a good place to tether them.

Old Joe stated, "This is a bad place. There have been a lot of robberies and murders at this spot!"

Joseph questioned, "I thought the animals would protect us?"

"That is only if you are the ones. If you aren't the ones, you may be dead in the morning."

"That is a chance we must take" said Joseph.

Joseph went around to get the stove off and Joe helped. Once the stove was off, Joe gathered firewood for the stove. He then started the fire.

I peeled potatoes and an onion, cut some ham and got the griddle and skillet out to cook them on. Old Joe offered to help, but there just wasn't much he could do. He just kept watching me.

I made enough supper so old Joe could eat with us if he wanted. When everything was cooked and ready, I called Joseph and Old Joe to come eat. Old Joe steadfastly refused food. I knew Joseph was hungry so we went ahead and ate.

After we had finished eating and the dishes were washed, dried and put away, we sat on the ground. It wasn't but a few minutes and the animals started coming up. There were no bears, but there were several deer with fawns along with rabbits and other small animals. We petted them all.

Old Joe watched us pet the animals and then he bowed down in front of me. I didn't pay any attention to him at first. When he didn't get up, I commanded, "You may rise and go in peace. I bless you for answering our questions and helping us."

Old Joe got up with a big smile on his face and left. I told Joseph about the legend. Joseph looked at me and asked, "You believe that?"

"I can't explain being able to pet animals any other way, can you?"

"No, but I wish I could. I have a feeling that this is going to cause us problems."

"While I am around Indians, I will be their Great White Indian Princess. It could keep us from getting scalped or killed."

We went to bed early that night. Joseph was tired and so was I. During the night, I was awakened by what I thought were screams. Then I thought that perhaps it was some bird or animal and went back to sleep.

The next morning we went to put the stove up on the back of the wagon. About one hundred feet from the back of the wagon was the body of a man. He had been mauled badly. I don't know what mauled him, but it had left large teeth marks and claw marks.

## Carolyn's Journal

I yelled, "Joseph, come quick!"

Joseph came running. He looked and remarked, "What a horrible way to die!"

"What should we do?"

"I think we should move on and not get mixed up in this any further."

"I agree, but I do feel guilty about not telling someone. Perhaps old Joe will find the body and tell someone." I got us some dried beef and two glasses of milk. This was our usual morning feast. We sat beside the wagon and ate the beef and drank the milk. The animals started coming up to be petted. There was one animal that was a lot larger than the others. He stayed back from us and the other animals. It was not a black bear, but it was some kind of bear. It had brown fur and almost white fur. It was huge.

Joseph remarked, "That must be the famous American Grizzly Bear. Let's see if he will come to be petted. He must be what killed that man back there."

"You be careful! He could kill you the same way!"

Joseph stood up and put out his hand. The bear stood up and put both paws in the air and growled.

I stood up to watch and the bear dropped to all fours and came lumbering up to me to be petted. He was huge! He must have been over eight feet in the air when he stood up. Just seeing him would put fright in a grown man not expecting him!

Joseph made a wise observation, "No one in the world is going to believe us when we tell them about this!"

"I guess the best thing to do is to keep quiet." I laughed and remarked, "Maybe we can tell our children someday!"

"That is a good idea. We will tell our children!" Joseph looked at the bear, "Mr. Bear, you saved our lives last night! For that the Great White Indian Princess will bless you!" The bear turned his massive head and looked at me as much as to say "let me have it."

I said, "Mr. Bear, you saved our lives last night, for that no man will kill you. You will live until the Great Spirit takes you home." I believe the bear grinned as he turned and left.

"That was a good blessing oh great princess," laughed Joseph.

"Don't laugh at me. The bear liked my blessing!" Don't you think I could be their princess?"

"You aren't believing it are you?"

"Why not? Can you give me a good reason not to believe it? The animals have saved me from harm twice now. I can't explain it any other way!"

"Let's get into the wagon and on our way before the citizens back there come and start asking questions!" Joseph had harnessed and hitched the teams while I was washing the dishes, drying them and putting them away. We got into the wagon and started on our way.

## Carolyn's Journal

During that day I had the feeling that we were being watched. I couldn't see anyone. I looked into the forest beside us and I saw nothing, yet I had that feeling. I told Joseph about my feeling.

"I have that same feeling! I can't see anyone, but I have that feeling."

We traveled as far as we could for that day and pulled off the road and stopped. Joseph got off the wagon and then helped me off as he usually did. He went to the rear of the wagon to get the stove off and onto the ground so I could get dinner. Several Indians came out of the woods and helped him get the stove off the back of the wagon. Some of them went out collecting wood for the stove. They even started the fire in the stove! Of course they had to examine the stove for they had never seen one before.

"Can any of you speak English?" Joseph asked.

One Indian came forward and said, "Me speak some."

He was slim and looked to be about Joseph's age. His skin was lighter than old Joe's and as he talked he used sign language.

"Why are you people helping us?"

"Great White Indian Princess bless tribe!" This was enough to let me know that he must be some kind of leader, perhaps a chief.

"How do you know she is the princess?"

"She come as promised. All signs she do!"

"Are you sure that the legend is true?"

"It true! Bad man killed. It true!"

When we finished eating, we sat on the ground and the Indians all came in front of us and bowed down.

"May this tribe grow and multiply and be protected from harm by the Great Spirit."

The Indians left as quickly as they appeared. We sat there a while longer and the animals came up to be petted. Later we went onto the wagon and to bed.

This procedure of the Indians watching over us all day, and helping us, lasted until we entered Union Landing.

We were finally about to meet the Ohio River and take a flatboat to Union Landing. I was looking forward to having a smooth ride the rest of the way.

We had started calling the one who could speak English, 'Big Eagle', because he had a head band with an eagle feather sticking up from it. Big Eagle came to Joseph and told him that he and his men would take us by land to Union Landing. Some of the flatboat operators were crooked and a lot of times killed the people and took all their possessions. Rather than take a chance on the princess being harmed, it would be better to go by land, so the animals and they could protect us.

Joseph listened carefully and then came to me and told me what Big Eagle suggested.

"I was hoping to have a smooth ride on into Union Landing. Sometimes I wish I wasn't their princess! You do what you think best, dear. I guess I can put up with this a while longer."

## Carolyn's Journal

We went by land, needless to say. Joseph didn't want to take a chance on getting both of us killed.

We never even got close to Fort Pitt. We had missed a turnoff or something and met the Ohio in Ohio. That rascal of a big Eagle knew when we missed the turn and never said anything! He wanted us to go by land all the time, so he could show some of the other tribes that he had found the princess.

As we traveled south and west, we went through some strange looking land. In places there were huge trees that may never have been seen by white man before! These trees were large and massive. They must have been here from the dawn of creation!

Going through the forest, we traveled through areas where the sun could not get through the canopy on top. A person could wander in these forests without a hat and never get sunburned. One could see evidence that the spring of the year saw many flowers. I saw the remains of Lady's Slippers, May Apples and other flowers. One could only imagine what an array of flowers there must be. Ferns are growing everywhere - some on the trunks of the trees.

The canopy over us was created by vines that grew up the trunks of the trees. These vines grew to the tops of the trees and wove the tops of the trees together. Small animals could travel from tree to tree for miles without coming to the ground.

There were any number of squirrels in the trees. There was one that would climb a tree and then jump off and glide to where he wanted to go. One glided down to me on the wagon. It wanted me to pet it. It was a cute little thing. I called it a flying squirrel for the lack of knowing any other name.

There were a number of birds of all kinds, sizes and shapes. There was a rather large woodpecker with an Ivory bill. It has black feathers and is as tall as a rooster. There is another woodpecker almost the same size. Its bill is not ivory colored. It has black and white feathers with a red top knot and red down the back of its neck. I would have hated to have had either of them mistake me for a tree!

There were several other woodpeckers in the forest and all of them made the forest sound like the percussion section of a symphony orchestra gone wild! You could look on the trunks of some of the trees, especially beech trees, and see their handiwork.

There were two other kinds of birds that were especially pretty and delicate looking. One was a small parrot. It was very pretty and small. The other bird was a very small bird that was an iridescent green with a patch of red at its throat. It would fly into a flower with its wings beating rapidly and then fly backwards out of the flower. I asked Big Eagle about this bird and he said they call it a humming bird because it makes a humming sound as it flies. I have never seen anything that could even compare to the beauty of these birds.

There were all different kinds of butterflies. Some were yellow with black stripes and tails from the back of their wings. Some of them were blue. Some

## Carolyn's Journal

were red in color. I believe the Lord must have made butterflies of every color man can see. They are beautiful and plentiful in this forest.

In one place we had to go through a shallow swamp. In that swamp were ducks, geese and other water fowl. All of them were very colorful. It was interesting watching them spot and capture their food. Of course there was an abundance of frogs, snakes and lizards.

In the forest one could hear a cacophony of all the sounds of the animals. In the swamp one could hear the sounds of the frogs and lizards.

I hadn't wanted to come overland, but the sights and sounds of the area made me believe that God had me come this way just to hear and see the beauty of His work! The rainbow is pretty, but I think this area is prettier!

By the end of the second day, we were getting into the foothills of the mountains. At first it was just hilly and then the hills began to get higher and higher. The Indians guiding us avoided going over the hills as much as possible. They guided us around hills that it would have been a lot closer to have gone over. They led us over the hills when they knew the passage or could not go around.

One evening we happened onto an open plain that had a small Indian village on it of the Shawnee Tribe. They took us in, fed us and in other ways treated us very well. Big Eagle told them that I was the princess they waited for. The next morning before we left and after we had eaten, the entire tribe came before me and bowed before me. Big Eagle came to me and whispered in my ear, "Want blessing from you."

I gave them a blessing for being so nice to us and feeding us.

We left that encampment and went into the woods again.

When we came to a creek that was full and too deep for men on foot to cross, they rode on horses beside the wagon and our team. They were making certain that nothing happened to their princess.

We crossed one river or creek that was still full from the run off and they had to float the wagon across. They tied logs to the side of the wagon and the back end. These logs were large enough to keep the wagon afloat. One of the braves swam his horse across the water carrying a rope with him. When he got to the far side, he brought the rope around a large tree and then returned to his horse. The other end was fastened to the tongue on the wagon. As we started across the swollen stream, the brave on the other side kept pulling the rope taught. The whole idea of the rope was to make certain that the wagon didn't float off downstream and maybe tip over or crash.

After several days of this travel, we arrived at Union Landing. The Indians all disappeared as we entered the little village. I felt secure in knowing that the Indians were not far away at anytime.

We traveled on over to Hanging Rock and looked for a mansion house we were told was there. We found one and drove into the drive and up to the house.

## Carolyn's Journal

Joseph got off the wagon, walked to the door and knocked. When someone came to the door, he said, "We were sent of Richard Greene to see the man of the house."

"You must be the O'Deigh's. I have been expecting you. Bob will be back soon. Get off that wagon and come in. I know that you must be worn out from that long journey. I'll have a hand tend your horses."

We went into the living room and sat on the horse hair sofa for a few minutes. What we really needed was to stand up and stretch out the wrinkles the trip had put in!

In a little while the front door opened and Bob walked in and headed straight for me. He gave me a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. He hugged Joseph and shook his hand.

"I take it that you are Carolyn's husband. It is good to have someone I know from Boston here!"

"This is Joseph O'Deigh, my husband, and I am Mrs. Joseph O'Deigh. I think that sounds great!" I mentioned with pride.

"As long as you are happily married."

"We are very happy!" I put my arm around Joseph and hugged him tight.

"Would you believe that there is an old Indian legend about a white lady and her husband? She is supposed to have long black hair, blue eyes and be beautiful. She can also pet wild animals. You fit that description so I thought you would like to know in case some Indian started staring at you."

"We have already run into that. The animals have been coming for us to pet in the evenings. We have petted all kinds of animals, but the biggest ones were a mamma black bear and her cub and a huge grizzly bear. A man had a notion of killing us and this big grizzly killed him. There is a group of Indians who have followed us and guided us for the last several weeks. These Indians have brought us food and showed us a shortcut to here."

"I would say that you folks have already heard of the legend and are in it up to your necks!"

"We didn't ask to be. I just fit the description. How do you explain the animals being friendly?"

"I can't. I never saw or heard of that before. Are you sure?"

"We are positive, aren't we Joseph?"

"What she says is the truth. She gave the old grizzly bear a blessing for saving our lives and he looked like he grinned!"

"Personally I do not want to be close enough to a bear of any kind to see if he grins!"

"We were both that close and we even petted him!"

"I believe you two may have been on the road too long! You folks will stay with me until your mansion is finished. We have been working on it and trying to get it done, but we just haven't had enough help. I'll take you two by it later. I want to show Joseph all about the furnace."

## Carolyn's Journal

"If you would show us our room and see that we get a bath tub so we can clean up, I would appreciate that very much."

"It shall be done oh great white princess!" He laughed as he went to get my request filled.

The maid came and took us to our room. In a minute a tub was brought in with another person carrying a bucket of water and a teakettle of hot water.

"Joseph, will you please go down to the wagon and bring up the two bags with our everyday clothes and our good clothes?" I kissed him before he left.

I took my bath while Joseph was gone and when Joseph returned he took his bath. We put on clean clothes and went downstairs. Bob met us at the stairs to take us to the dinning room. It was good not to have to get the stove down, gather wood, start a fire and cook something to eat. When we were through eating, I told Bob, "That was delicious."

"Thank-you Carolyn. The cook will be happy to hear that."

"You say you can't finish our house for lack of help?"

"Yes. We still are working on the furnace, so we don't have men to work on your house."

"I believe that I may know where I can get you some extra workers."

"I would appreciate that. Where are you planning to get the help?"

"I thought that maybe my Indians would help if I asked them."

"I am sure they would be willing to help, but my men would not work with them. There would be all kinds of trouble and I don't need that!"

"You mean that your men are so prejudiced they won't even work beside an indian?"

"That is about the size of it. Maybe we can use your Indians to work on the house and let the men work on the furnace?"

"I will have to see what I can do with them tomorrow." I took Joseph aside and told him, "I want to see you in our room when you get a chance."

"When Bob and I get through discussing work, I'll be up."

"I'll see you in the morning, Bob. I'm tired." I went up to our room, put on my nightgown and crawled into bed after I thanked God for the safe journey and for a bed to sleep in for the first time in months.

In a short while Joseph came into the room.

"Now just what is it you wanted to see me about?"

"You know the legend?"

"Yes."

"We have been overlooking a part of it."

"What part?" Joseph asked as he took off his clothes and got ready for bed.

"You remember that the princess would have long black hair, blue eyes, be white, be beautiful, be able to pet animals and be ---- Do you remember?"

"I'm sorry, but I don't seem to recall that one."

"She would be with child. Surely you remember that!"

"Oh, yes. I believe I do."

"Doesn't that mean anything to you?"

## Carolyn's Journal

Joseph lay on the bed a minute or two and then it hit him. "You mean that you are with child?"

I looked at him and smiled and said, "Yes!"

"This calls for a celebration!"

"Not tonight, dear. I'm tired and want to rest."

"Just as you say, dear. I couldn't sleep now if I tried really hard! You are sure now. You aren't just teasing me are you?"

"No, Father. Now get some rest."

Before I finished the last sentence, he was sound asleep. He must have tried really hard!

The next morning we went down to breakfast and Joseph had a smile on his face that forced Bob to inquire "Well Joseph, what prompts you to have such a smile this morning?"

"May I tell him, Carolyn?"

"Of course!"

"Carolyn told me last night that she is with child! Isn't that good news?"

"I knew that already. Didn't you know?"

"Who told you? I didn't know."

"The old legend. The things that point her out are very clear. If the Indians claimed Carolyn fit all the points, then she had to be with child!"

"It makes no difference how we found out, the fact remains that I am going to be a father!"

"You can celebrate today by going with Bob to the furnace and look over your new job" I remarked.

"I almost forgot! I have a letter for you, Carolyn. I'll go get it." Bob disappeared and then returned with the letter. It was addressed to Mrs. Joseph O'Deigh. That really looked great. It was the first letter addressed to me in my new name. I loved that! It was a letter from my mother. I opened the letter and read it. I then shared parts of it with Bob and Joseph.

"Mother writes that she misses us very much and hopes we are both in good health. She has been asked to play before most of the crowned heads of Europe. She has refused to play in France because the situation there is so bad. She said that she doesn't want her head lopped off! She will be gone better than six weeks and hopes to be able to visit with Féodore, Earl, Mother Herta and Gramma. That is about all she has to say except to give Bob a kiss for her and one to Joseph. She also admonished me to take good care of Joseph!"

I went over and kissed Bob on the cheek and did the same to Joseph.

"What is the matter? Is that all I get?"

"Don't be silly. That was from Mother." I went over and gave Joseph a meaningful kiss.

He kissed me back and said, "Now that was more like it!"

"Now that was from me!"

Joseph laughed.

## Carolyn's Journal

The next morning I went out into Bob's garden behind the house and was hoping to see one of the Indians. I called, "Big Eagle, are you there? I need your help."

Big Eagle appeared almost instantly. It was so sudden that it frightened me. "Big Eagle, can any of your men do carpentry work?"

"Indian good carpenter. What you need?"

"They are short of help on the house they are building for me. Do you suppose some of your men could finish my house so I can get into it soon?"

"Tell when, where start."

"You'll start, if you can, tomorrow morning about sunrise at the house in Pine Grove. I don't know what the pay will be."

"No pay. Do for princess!"

"Thank you, Big Eagle. I'll have to think up a good blessing to give you and your men."

"You have baby girl. Look like you!"

Before I could ask or say anything further, Big Eagle disappeared as fast as he had appeared. That fellow was developing a bad habit of disappearing.

I went back into the house a little sad because I had hoped the first child would be a boy. For some reason, most men want the first child to be a boy and I thought Joseph would be no different. I wanted the first child to be a boy for him.

That evening when Bob and Joseph came home from work, I told Bob that the Indians could do carpentry work and that they would be at the house at sunrise to go to work.

Bob looked at me and said, "If they can and are good, we can certainly use them. How much did they want?"

"Nothing but a blessing from me."

"That is all?"

"They are doing this for their princess!"

"I just hope they didn't lie to you about being carpenters. We really need help bad."

"You need to remember that Big Eagle is the only one that speaks even a little English. You must tell him what you want and go from there."

"I can work with that."

"Big Eagle had news for me today also."

"And just what news did he have this time?" Joseph inquired.

"He told me that I will have a baby girl that looks like me. I'm disappointed because I wanted a boy for you."

"I'm not disappointed! You will have a baby girl that looks like you. I'm happy about that."

"Are you really sure?"

"Absolutely! I will love any baby we have that is born normal and healthy!"

"I thought we would call her Agatha Erin. We will probably wind up calling her Erin. How does Agatha Erin O'Deigh sound to you?"

"Erin is a good solid Irish name. I approve of that."

## Carolyn's Journal

The next day after work when Bob and Joseph came home, Bob said, "Those Indians of yours are the best workers I ever had. They are really good!"

"Then they didn't lie about what they could do?"

"No. They really are good carpenters."

"I'm glad. Now maybe we will get the house done so we can move into our home and quit bothering you."

"You are no bother at all - not when you get me such good, competent help."

"My Indians haven't failed me yet."

"I expect, if everything goes as it did today, we will have your house finished in a week or less."

"That is good news."

For the next few evenings all I could hear from Bob was what good workers my Indians were.

Before the week was out, Bob came home and told me that the house was finished and we could move in any time. The night before we were to move into our new house, Joseph, Bob and I went to look at it.

It was a big house! A mansion! It was in the form of a 'T' and the front part was sixty feet long by forty feet wide. It was two stories high and the back part of the 'T' was almost as big as the front part. There were two dormers on the main roof with a roof porch coming out from that. The roof porch had a railing around it to keep people from falling off. The roof porch came out over the front porch below.

The house was on the brow of a hill. The top of the hill had been flattened to accommodate the house, yard and a garden. Some rocks had been moved when the hill was flattened and they had been hewed and used for the foundation blocks of the house. The sides of the house were covered with clapboards and the roof was covered with hand hewed, Oak shingles.

There was a drive that came up one side of the hill to in front of the porch and then went down the other side of the hill. It was like a curved drive.

The front of the house had a curved porch over its full length. The roof of the porch was held up with huge columns going all the way up to the roof. The front of the house looked like a plantation house in the south.

I remarked to Bob, "You people have certainly given us a beautiful house! This is fabulous. I never dreamed we would have a house this nice, ever! Thank-you Bob."

"Don't thank me! Your father sent me the plans, paid for the land, material and labor. He said that he hated to move you folks all the way out here and then not have something decent for you to live in!"

"I guess that he was salving his conscience for shoving us out here."

"Don't be hard on your father, Carolyn. He ordered this built as a wedding gift to you two from him. I think you ought to write and thank him for it. There aren't many young couples who have a home as nice as this given to them to start housekeeping in."

## Carolyn's Journal

"You are right, Bob. He shoved us out in the wilderness, but we have the nicest house around!"

We went inside the house and into the parlor. It was almost as big as the Baron's. We went into the living room. It had a beautiful chandelier. The room was large also. We went into the other rooms downstairs. There were chandeliers in each room. They were all of cut glass. There was a cellar under the kitchen for storing vegetables and canned goods over the winter. I remarked to Joseph, "We will never have enough furniture to fill this house."

"We don't need much furniture because we will fill it with children and love!"

"We shall see what God would have us do about the children! Love is no problem. God may only let us have one child!"

"Then that one will have lots of love and a big house to play in."

"I love the way you think!"

We went up to the second floor and the bedrooms. They were all large bedrooms. Then we went up to the dormers and on out to the roof porch. I looked out and I believe I could see for miles. I could see the furnace and the cabins the workers lived in.

I commented, "This is a beautiful view up here!"

Bob pointed out some things about the area. "The company has purchased the land and built the log cabins that you see. That is where the workers who work at the furnace will live. The land and cabin are given to them for as long as they work at the furnace."

"The furnace operates for about eight months a year. There are several reasons for not operating longer. The weather is too hot in the summer. The furnace needs a lot of water for its operation and the streams that supply water dry up in the summer. We need the down time to repair and work on the furnace. Because of the heat the furnace operates under, things happen to the furnace."

"If you will look to the right of the furnace you will see a large building. That is the company store. The people at the furnace can buy anything that they need at the store. The store manger lives on the second floor of the store. On the back side of the store, which you can't see from here, is a room where all of the transactions of the whole operation are recorded.

"All employees are paid in script. Script is a note that states how much money the company owes the worker. When the worker goes to the store, he uses the script instead of money and gets his change in script. This script is only good in this store so the worker can't buy in any other store."

"The man in charge of the operation is called the Iron Master. He has a large mansion house to live in. If you look in front of the store you will see that mansion. I am the Iron Master here and that is my house when I am out here."

"How many people does this furnace employ?" I wanted to know.

"It will employ about two hundred people. Some of those people will work here at the furnace and the rest will work as colliers, miners or loggers out away from the furnace. We furnish them housing if they want it, but some have chosen to live off company land and on their own land."

## Carolyn's Journal

"If you look beyond the store, to the right you will see a barn. That is for the riding and carriage horses. If you look above the furnace you will see another large barn that we use to house the oxen and the mules we use around the furnace. There are other barns out away from the furnace where we keep mules and oxen for hauling logs and ore."

"There is a building that you can't see very well. It is the blacksmith shop. We have a lot of need for a smithy here"

"I really didn't realize this was as big an operation as this!" Remarked Joseph.

"You can't appreciate all of this until you can get up high like this and see it all."

I remarked, "We certainly are up high here!"

Joseph asked "How much iron can this furnace put out in a day?"

"It probably can smelt about sixteen tons of iron a day. All of each tapping will be going into castings during the week and on Sundays into pig iron."

Joseph looked down at me and asked, "How do you like your new house, Mrs. O'Deigh?"

"I love it!"

"Well, I can see you two don't need me anymore. I'll go on over to the furnace. I have a few things I have to do there. You two can take the horse and buggy on back to Hanging Rock. I assume you are going to want to move in as soon as possible!"

"Yes, indeed! I don't want to be any more bother to you than I already have."

"Carolyn, you know better than that. I owe you if anything! You are no bother! By the way, the things you had shipped are down on the wharf at Union Landing. You'll need to get those over here as soon as possible."

The next day we got our wagon out of Bob's barn. We put all of our things into the wagon and headed for our new home in Pine Grove. When we got out of Hanging Rock a short distance, Big Eagle and his braves stopped us. Big Eagle said, "We help. We put things in new house for you."

I said to Big Eagle, "That is nice, but you don't have to. We can do it."

"You with baby. No lift! We do!"

I had learned that one doesn't refuse Big Eagle. One just doesn't argue with him about things he has his mind made up about. Some of his braves sat quietly on the back of the wagon as we traveled to Pine Grove.

When we arrived in Pine Grove, the braves jumped off the wagon and waited for Big Eagle to tell them what to do. In a very short while the wagon was unloaded. It had never occurred to me as to how little we had lived with on our trip to Hanging Rock! It just goes to prove that a person does not need a lot of things to live! We are all blessed by the abundance and availability of material things - things that we really don't need.

Joseph and the Indians got the wagon and headed for Union Landing to get our things that had been shipped. They loaded the wagon and returned to Pine

## Carolyn's Journal

Grove. The braves took the barrels from the wagon to the rooms that I indicated. They were truly good workers. They carried the barrels and handled them carefully so they wouldn't break something in them. When the wagon was empty, we all climbed aboard and headed for Hanging Rock. We will have to wait until tomorrow for the last load and move into our new home.

The next morning we loaded that last load and headed for our new home. After the load was unloaded I discovered a crate that I did not recognize. It had a note tacked to it from Father. The note read:

Dearest Carolyn,

I am sorry that I had to send you and Joseph off to Ohio. Because you can't cook in a fireplace and won't be able to buy a stove there, I am sending this one just for you.

I hope you like your wedding gift of this stove and your mansion.

Father

Reading that note from Father made me cry. I have it put away with my keepsakes because it means a lot to me.

After we got all moved in and settled, word got out that I had a stove in the kitchen to cook on. Most people cooked in the fireplace and so I began to get visitors. These visitors were all wanting to see my cook stove!

I was quite pleased with my stove and proud to show it to whoever wanted to see it.

The ladies loved my stove, but some of the men were certain that it would burn the house down. They said that it was unsafe to have a fire burning out on the floor. I guess they hadn't noticed that iron was all around that fire. The truth probably lies in the fact that those men did not want to buy one for their wives!

I am really proud of my stove. It burns wood and has a top for frying and boiling. There is a large oven for baking things and a tank on the end of the stove for heating water so I always have warm or hot water. On the back of the oven and over the stove top is a warming oven for keeping the food warm. It is a housewife's dream come true. Whoever developed it surely had women to tell them how it should be made!

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Seven THE FIRST OF MANY

I received notice from father that President Jackson was planning to send all Indians of all tribes to reservations west of the Mississippi. This bothered me because I couldn't see sending Indians to a reservation if they were peaceable and trying to farm or do some kind of meaningful work. I certainly didn't want Big Eagle and crew to have to go way out across the Mississippi! They have and continue to be a big help to me.

"Some people find it hard to forget when Indians stole their children, massacred whole families and killed white men for no apparent reason!" Joseph offered.

"I'm sure that if that happened to me I would have bad feelings too, but when a group of Indians are peaceable and trying to make a living by working the land the same as a whole lot of white people do, I think they should be given the same chance as the white people!"

I had gone to the furnace to walk home with Joseph. We arrived home and I began getting dinner. I fixed several things. I had a roast, vegetables, mashed potatoes and a dessert of canned pears. Joseph ate it and remarked, "That is better than what we had coming in the wagon! Where did you get all of those things?"

"The meat is from one of the ladies in the cabins. The vegetables are from a can that mother canned back in Boston and the dessert was from back in Boston. The mashed potatoes are from some we brought with us."

"I knew we would get this thing right by the time we got here, " Joseph laughed.

"I guess we have!" We both laughed.

Before I had picked up Joseph to come home, I had a disagreement with one of the workers in Bob's office over Indians having rights. The worker, Paul, took exception to my thinking and threatened me. I paid no attention to it for I thought it to be the idle words of an angry man.

While we were in the house enjoying dinner, a figure was crawling around outside the house pouring something on the house and the ground next to the house. Not being careful, he had splashed some on his hands and clothing. The figure stepped back from the house and started to light whatever he had poured on the house! When he went to ignite the fluid, his hands burst into flames. He then wiped his hands on his clothing and set his clothing on fire. In just a couple of minutes he was totally on fire!

We heard screams and rushed to see what was going on. When we opened the door, there was this figure engulfed in flames! Joseph grabbed a blanket from a bed and wrapped it around the body. The flames were soon out. Joseph took the blanket off the person. It was hard to see who it was because of the burns and chunks of flesh came off with the blanket! Whoever it was couldn't have lived more than a few minutes. He was terribly burned.

## Carolyn's Journal

Big Eagle stepped out of the woods and came to me. He had seen what had happened and said to me, "It bad man. Try set house afire. Burned self instead!"

We got a torch to see if we could tell who it was. I told Joseph, "It looks like Paul to me, but I cannot be certain." I sent Big Eagle to get the sheriff. Big Eagle had been to the sheriff with me earlier and knew where to go. Meanwhile Joseph went to get Bob.

Bob and Joseph returned and Bob looked at the hideous face and said, "I'm quite certain that is Paul. Let's check his cabin and see if he is there."

Joseph and Bob went to Paul's cabin to see if he was home. His wife was evasive at first and then broke down and said, "It probably is Paul. He told me he was going to burn the big house on the hill to get even with Mrs. O'Deigh. I begged him not to do it, but he kept right on with his plan. He had some special fluid that he used for setting fires. It burns quickly and ignites easily. That is what he was using over there tonight!"

Bob said, "You come to my office in the morning and we will talk about his burial and what the company can do for you. I didn't agree with your husband, but I feel sorry for you!"

"Don't feel sorry for me! He abused me for years. I may appear uncompassionate, but I'm glad to see him get back on himself what he has done to so many others."

The sheriff came, saw what had happened and who it was, and declared it an accident. He told Paul's wife she could have the body for burial. By now several people had been aroused and two of the men were assigned to take the body wherever his wife wanted it taken. The sheriff left. Big Eagle disappeared as usual. Bob went back to his home and the rest of the crowd dispersed.

Joseph went over to the house to see what this special material was that Paul was using. He smelled of the material he had rubbed onto his finger. "It smells like a new product they are just now beginning to produce. I believe it is called camphene. If it is, it is very combustible and there is very little market for it. It can't be used in lamps for fear it will explode."

"No matter what, he died a horrible death."

"I guess you know that you do live a charmed life. I don't know if the legend is true or you just have a guardian angel sitting on your shoulder. We have been saved from death three times and now a freak accident saved our house and possibly our lives! I'm glad you love me!"

It was now nearing Thanksgiving time and soon Christmas. I was starting to plan a room for my nursery and get some clothes made for my lovely little Agatha Erin.

While I was sewing clothes for Erin one day, I heard a knock on the door. It was mother! She was alone. She looked disheveled from the ride out, but she appeared happy to see me and of course I was happy to see her. I gave her a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. She didn't want Joseph and me to come to Ohio and had argued with father over it.

"Hello, mother! You look worn out!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I am! That ride is awful. It is worse than any I have had to take in Europe!"

"If you think that was bad, you ought to try it in a wagon! Even the milk churned to butter!"

"How is Joseph? Are you taking good care of him?"

Here I am expecting a child and she is wanting to know if I am taking good care of Joseph! "Yes, mother, I am. We are both just as happily married as ever, if not more."

"Do you have someone to bring my bags and trunks in?"

"I don't have anyone. We can't afford servants yet."

"What about your Indians?"

"They probably took off when they saw you! I'll see. Big Eagle! I need one of you!"

No reply. No Big Eagle.

"I guess we have to carry or drag your things in by ourselves unless you want to leave them until Joseph comes home."

"It might rain! We can drag them to the porch can't we?"

"I guess you know that I am with child!"

"Land sakes, child! I could tell that the moment I saw you. That is about the only reason your stomach would look like that!" She laughed a little.

We dragged the trunks and bags up onto the porch. I was too out of breath to do anything else. I sat on a trunk for a moment to catch my breath. Mother looked at me and questioned, "What's wrong, dear?"

"You come to my door and the first thing you want to know is, 'Am I taking good care of Joseph?' You want me to help you drag your trunks and bags to the porch. Not once have you asked how I am or how do I feel or told me that I shouldn't be lifting heavy objects. When I set on a trunk to catch my breath, you ask me what is wrong. You should know! You have been here. I am almost six months with this child!"

"I'm sorry, dear! You have always helped me before and I guess I just wasn't thinking. How are you feeling?"

"I have my good days and I have my bad days. Today is a bad day. How is father? Why didn't he come with you?"

"He is fine. He couldn't come because of his work. Is there something I can do to help you?"

"If you would help me sew some clothes for my baby girl that is going to look like me, I would appreciate it."

"How in the world do you know you are going to have a girl - much less that she will look like you?"

"The Indians have told me. How they know, I don't know, except I am their Great White Indian Princess."

"How did that get started?"

"That is a long story. I'll tell you inside. Let me have your hand."

I let her help me up onto my feet. We went inside.

"If you will help me sew some of Erin's clothes, that will be a big help."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I'll be more than happy to sew for my little grandchild."

Mother and I sewed and soon had the sewing done.

I asked mother questions about being in my condition and what to expect. She answered all my questions and put in some answers that I hadn't ask questions for. This was a time that I needed my mother or someone similar. I am going to be doing something that killed Aggy! It is kind of frightening. Especially if you have no one to talk to who has done it.

"Mother, I'm a little nervous about this. You know Aggy had the best doctors and both she and the baby died!"

"Oh push tosh child! You aren't Aggy! You are of me and I gave birth to you all right, didn't I?"

"Yes, you did and without help!"

"Aggy must have taken back after Abigail. The only difference is that Abigail did have a child. Aggy lost everything. You shouldn't have any trouble. Just keep thinking on the good side of things like you always do."

"My mind wanders onto Aggy and her baby occasionally and I find it hard to cast those thoughts out."

"Maybe if you just told yourself 'I am the Great White Indian Princess and all will be well' that would help keep your mind off those bad thoughts."

"I'll try that the next time and see what happens. I thought you didn't believe in my Indians?"

"I don't."

We chatted and gossiped a little about almost everything. I took mother throughout the house to see our beautiful house father had built as a wedding gift.

"This is a very large and beautiful house. He must have been salving his conscience for shoving you two all the way out here!"

"Bob said that he didn't think he was. He said it was because he loves me very much."

"He does love you and has always been very proud of you and your accomplishments." Mother laughed, "I'm not sure it would be this much though!"

I laughed at mother's comment also.

One day mother was in the kitchen doing the dishes and I was in the living room resting. I was almost asleep in my chair when I heard the most hair raising scream I have ever heard. I am certain that it must have aroused some of the dead!

It was mother in the kitchen. I calmed mother down and asked her what was wrong. I have a big window over the sink that overlooks my garden and the woods beyond.

"I was washing dishes and enjoying the view you have. I looked down at a dish I was washing and when I looked up there was an Indian staring at me. He scared the bejabers out of me!"

I looked out the window and could see that Big Eagle and company had come to turn the garden over so it would be ready to plant in the spring. "Mother,

## Carolyn's Journal

that was just my friend Big Eagle! I have written you about how much he has helped me. He is harmless. He is the one that helped get this house finished. Your scream must have frightened him too. I don't see him anywhere. I want you to go to the living room and sit and rest. I don't want you to have a problem with your heart from this!"

I helped mother to the living room and a chair. Mother objected all the way, but I insisted. After I got her seated, I went to the door and called for Big Eagle. Mother's scream must have curled his hair. Big Eagle and company were gone!

I went back into the house and mother was back in the kitchen doing dishes. "Mother! I mean for you to come to the living room and sit for a while. We can chat a while and the dishes will be right there waiting for you when we finish."

We went back to the living room and chatted for a while. I told mother how Big Eagle and company had carried me across the streams as we came out and how royally I was treated. When I finished I could see mother was about asleep, so I talked some more until she was asleep. She needed rest for certain.

She must have really put a fright into Big Eagle. He never showed up at my place again until mother had left for home!

Thanksgiving time came up on us sooner than I had expected. Mother and I went looking around in what we had for Thanksgiving dinner. We went to the company store to see what they had. We went to Hanging Rock to look in their store. In all we managed to get a good Thanksgiving meal together and we invited Bob and Nancy and would have invited my Indians, but mother's scream had dispersed them.

We celebrated Christmas with our first tree in our house! Mother and I cut out things to hang on the tree. We bought some cranberries and strung them and put those strings on the tree. We strung some popped corn and put it on the tree. We made some wreaths of holly and hung them in the windows. We made many things and put them up for Christmas. I hung our socks on the mantle over the fireplace.

On Christmas eve, mother pulled out the harp that she had sent when they shipped our things. She tuned the harp and then began to play. Things began to look and sound like Christmas. We celebrated with mother, Bob and Nancy. We all gathered around mother at the harp and sang carols. We had a great quartet. Bob was bass, Joseph was tenor, mother and Nancy were alto and I was soprano.

"I think we ought to go out and sing carols in the streets, " I suggested.

"There won't be any need to, everyone is over at the church!" said Joseph.

"Uh Oh! I was supposed to be over there! I forgot all about it!" Remarked Bob.

"We were invited also, but I forgot to tell Carolyn. Maybe it isn't too late to catch some of the program" suggested Joseph with a red face.

We went as quickly as possible to the church. They were already leaving when we arrived. I went up to the pastor and apologized for not being there to see the program.

## Carolyn's Journal

The pastor looked at me and said, "I don't believe I have met you yet!"

"I'm sorry. I'm Mrs. Joseph O'Deigh and this is my husband Joseph. This is my mother, Mrs. Greene and I think you already know Bob and Nancy. I'm sorry about not being here for the program. Someone told my husband, but he has a poor memory for things like this. Please tell me the next time and we will be here if we are able."

"I have heard a lot about your work for the Indians. I'd like to meet with you sometime and see what you have in mind to do in this area for these people. I think we can work together and do good here."

"I would love that. I want to help people and do for them what I can. I surely do hope the people haven't gotten the idea that we are snobs that live in the big house on the hill!"

"They don't. They figured you were busy or something. They understand. They know that you are with child and maybe sick."

"When the baby is born, we will try to get things straightened out so we can come to church each Sunday."

"We will be expecting you then."

New Year's eve came and Joseph and I celebrated our first year of marriage by staying up to see the New Year in. The last year had produced changes in both our lives.

Today was the big celebration and the beginning of the furnace going into blast. Bob had asked mother, Joseph and I to sit up in front with all the dignitaries. I felt out of place being in front of all those people in my condition, but Bob had insisted. He introduced the dignitaries and then introduced two young girls who were the spelling champions of Pine Grove School. He had them stand so they could be seen.

After all the speakers had spoken, Bob lit the fire in the furnace. It was now officially in blast. The meeting was over and everyone began to go home or where ever they wanted.

Time began to come closer to my delivery date. I was a little frightened from not knowing or having gone through this before. Mother kept assuring me that the Indian Princess would be all right.

My birthday - March 17 - came and I celebrated a little, but was bound by my condition as to what I could do. On March 19, Agatha Erin began to let me know that she was getting cramped for space and wanted more. I had made my birthing bed on the floor beside Joseph's and my bed. Mother acted as my midwife and the birth was relatively easy. It wasn't as bad as I had feared. When mother saw the baby, she exclaimed, "I swanny! She looks just like you did when you were born!"

"I told you the Indians said she would look just like me! You didn't believe me. Now maybe you will believe my Indians more!"

Joseph was so happy about me being all right and the baby being born all right that he could hardly contain himself. Mother was pleased and proud to have brought her first grandchild into the world.

## Carolyn's Journal

In a few days things began to get back to normal and mother announced that she was going to go back to Boston. She was going to have to go on another concert tour soon and needed to go home.

Joseph and I took mother to Union Landing. We pulled up to the landing and Joseph helped mother get her things aboard the boat.

When the lines were being loosed, I held little Erin up for her grandmother to see and waved her little hand and arm at her grandmother.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Eight THE TWINS

One of the families who had been attracted to the work in Ohio was the Barkley's of Virginia, later West Virginia.

They had left the mountains in Virginia by wagon and arrived at Pine Grove. Jesse had already been to the area and had been assigned one of the cabins of the workers.

The Barkley family pulled up to the cabin and Jesse helped his wife and daughter, Suzie, get the wagon unloaded. They really didn't have much to unload because for years they had lived with Mrs. Barkley's parents. They unpacked what they had and set up housekeeping.

The cabin was made with large logs that had been hewed on the inside and outside. Where the logs lay on top of each other, a chinking of clay and straw was forced between them to keep out the cold weather. It was just one room with a loft. The floor was dirt, but Jesse could put in a wood floor any time that he had the money.

The loft would be Suzie's room. On one end of the cabin was a large fireplace for warming the house in the winter and for cooking meals.

There was a porch that went all across the front of the cabin. It would be nice to sit on in the summer.

"When ya all gotta start work?"

"Today at noon."

Becky walked over to Jesse and gave him a big hug and a big kiss.

Jesse was caught off guard and asked, "What's that for?" "Just to show you that I still love ya, ya big galoot!"

"I gotta get me some rest so I can work." He laid down on the mattress of corn shucks. Becky got Suzie and went outside.

It was a beautiful day! The trees on the hillsides were all green and their leaves were rustling in the wind. The hills rose around Suzie and Becky like silent watchmen clothed in green. The sky was powder blue with little puffs of clouds floating by now and then.

It was a hot August day, but the breeze made it livable. It was too late to plant a garden this year, but next year they would try to have a garden, a cow, some chickens and a hog!

The garden would give them vegetables to can for the winter and to eat during the summer. The cow would give them fresh milk, butter, butter milk and cheese. The chickens would give them eggs and maybe even some dumplings from time to time. Of course fried chicken is good too! The hog would be butchered in the fall and give them ham, bacon, chops, lard, sausage and salt side for their green beans.

They could cure the pork themselves and they could can some meat. Sausage would be made of the parts of the hog that weren't used for anything

## Carolyn's Journal

else. The sausage would be stuffed into the intestines after they had been washed and cleaned good.

Suzie would get the bladder to play with. She would wash it extra good both inside and out. She would then tie two of the tubes coming into it and blow air into the other one. She would work the bladder with her hands to get it as large as possible without it bursting. When it was as big as it was going to be, she would set it up to dry after tying off the tube she blew it up through. After it was dry she could pat it up into the air. It would float in the air. It was fun to play with if you had someone to play with you.

They would make head cheese of the head. Nothing much of the hog was wasted. Suzie's Grampa had always told her, "The hog gave his all for us, so it is no more than fittin' we eat all of him!"

Ohio has open range to where animals ( cows and hogs mostly) may roam freely over the land.

The milk cows wear a bell on a collar around their neck. Everyone tries to have a bell with a different sound so they can tell where their cow is when they have to get it for milking.

The hogs were marked by notches on the ears. These notches were made in different ways so the owner could tell his hogs from someone else's. Every fall there was a hog round up. The owners pick out their hog and take him home to finish the fattening process. The hogs were kept in a pen and fed corn and slop from the table for about six weeks. On a cold day in November the men and older boys in the family will butcher the hog.

The furnace at Pine Grove is being built beside a hill. The hillside is cut away and a retaining wall of sandstone blocks is laid up to hold the hill back.

The stack will go up about 35 feet and the hill on top will be flattened to accommodate the stockyard, a cistern and the charging house which will be on top of the furnace stack.

As ore, limestone or charcoal is brought in it is measured or weighed. Charcoal is measured by bushels, ore and limestone is weighed by tons. This is all done at the side of the company store next to the furnace. Once the load is weighed or measured it is taken up to the stockyard.

In the stockyard, the materials are prepared for the furnace. No part of the burden is put into the furnace that is larger than a man's fist. Men with sledge hammers break the materials to the smaller size. Once broken down the material is put into covered sheds to keep it dry until it is placed into the furnace.

Here at Pine Grove the ore will be roasted before it is put into the furnace. This process is also called calcining the ore. To do this they will lay logs on the ground and then place charcoal and brands on the logs. A layer of ore will then be placed over the top of the charcoal and brands. These layers of charcoal and ore will continue upward until the pile is about fifteen feet high. At this height the pile is set afire. When the fire is out, the ashes are sifted for the calcined ore. This ore is then put into the furnace with charcoal and limestone.

## Carolyn's Journal

The company store keeps all payroll records, store records and records of all transactions of the furnace.

Pig iron in 1830 sold for \$10 to \$14 a ton. The price of pig iron fluctuated over the years so that sometimes the furnace made a profit and some times lost money. Pine Grove furnace will make most of its iron into moldings and would therefore not see too much of a loss.

The man who operates the company store in Pine Grove lives in a cabin close to the store building. The first floor of the store building is used for the store and one side room is used for the bookkeepers. One end of the store is made of wood and is used for the feed and flour business of the store. The store is a general store where anything can be purchased that a person might need. Between the wooden section of the store and the main building there are steps going up the side of the building and a hand operated lift that is used to carry heavy objects to the second and third floor.

The Iron Master is the social leader in the area, but is also the enforcer of the laws if need be.

There is a school at Pine Grove about one fourth mile from the furnace. Regular school is held during the winter months with a man teacher. The lessons are taught with the hickory switch if necessary.

Spelling bees are fun for the children and are held when most of the parents can come and see their child spell. They are usually held on a Friday or Saturday evening.

Each furnace has its own champion fighter. The champion is found by having fights between combatants at the furnace. Most of these fights are a bloody mess as few rules apply. The fighters are usually so full of whiskey that they don't know when they are beaten!

Children have chores around the cabin to do and when they are finished with the chores, they then do their home work. Once the chores and the homework for school are done, the children can play, hunt, fish or whatever they want to do. Older boys and girls will use this time to go courting.

There will be an end of the harvest celebration and a square dance each year. At Pine Grove there will be a Fourth of July celebration. There will be a parade and a community picnic. At the end of each year's blast there will be a celebration if there has been no accidents during the year.

The end of the harvest celebration is a time when there are contests for all. The boys will compete for which one has raised the tallest corn stalk or the tallest sun flower. The boys will have a greased pig contest. The boy who catches the greased pig will be awarded a prize of cash.

There will also be a greased pole for the boys to climb. The one who climbs the greased pole to the top gets the bag of money on the top of the pole. There will be a contest to see which boy has raised the nicest vegetables. Girls and young ladies will have contests for the best made dress and the best cook. Girls and women will also be judged for the best looking and tasting jams or jellies and the best looking canned goods.

## Carolyn's Journal

The ladies will make a quilt each year from quilt blocks sewn by the girls the previous year. This quilt will be hung for all to see and will be raffled off, the proceeds to be used for some charitable cause.

In the afternoon there will be horse racing for the men and older boys. There will be a race of the work horses and then a race of thoroughbreds. Men will bet on which horse will win in each race. This betting could get out of hand as some poor man might bet all he had on a horse thinking he had a sure winner only to lose. This will put the family in dire straights for a long time.

The church is supposed to discourage wagering of any kind, so I hope it does.

Suzie is a pretty girl with green eyes, dark red hair and a tanned complexion with freckles. When she plays out in the summer, her hair turns a little lighter red and the freckles darken much to her disgust. She doesn't wash her hair much, so it is stringy hanging to her waist. She tries to brush her hair with a brush that her mother has made from broom corn. Her mother has taken a handful of broom corn, tied and wound one end with twine to make a handle and then she cut the other end short and straight for the brush. Suzie uses this, but it does not do much good.

Suzie has a very pleasant personality and is very intelligent. She loves to read anything she can get to read. The family's King James Bible is nearly worn out from her reading it so much!

Common School to her is a drudgery because she knows all that is being taught through her reading so much. She asks people that she thinks might have something for her to read for the loan of reading material. If they lend her some, she always returns it when she has finished reading it. This helps to keep her occupied during the school term.

Suzie's dress is typical for a girl her age in the 1820's. Her family doesn't have much but pride, so Suzie doesn't have many clothes. She has one set of clothes for "Sunday-go-to meeting" and one dress for every day wear. Because she only has the one dress for everyday wear she has to be careful to keep it clean or wash it between wash days herself.

To get cloth to make dresses or any clothes, the mother or daughters have to first spin the thread from wool and then weave the cloth. The cloth is then cut into patterns that have been drawn on the cloth. These pieces are then sewed together at the edges to make the dress. If the girl is an older girl she does this by herself. The result being that she knows the value of the dress. If the family has money, they might purchase the cloth for the dress from someone who weaves cloth for a living. The dress still has to be cut out and sewed. The sewing is all done by hand and the smaller the stitches, the better the dress will wear. Larger stitches might pull out in the washing process. Once the dress is sewed together, it then has to be fitted to the girl it is for. If it doesn't fit proper in one place those stitches have to be removed and the material sewn where it is supposed to be sewn. Once the dress is deemed to fit, it is then marked along the bottom hem for sewing. This is generally done by having the dress on and having

## Carolyn's Journal

someone else measure from the floor up a certain distance all the way around. This isn't too bad because the dress must not show her ankle.

With all of this work for one dress, it is easy to see why the girls don't have too many dresses.

Boy's and men's clothing is somewhat easier to make, but still has to go through the steps of making the thread, weaving it into cloth, cutting the pattern and sewing the end product.

Lye soap is made by boiling the garbage to get the glycerin for the soap. Lye is made by pouring water over wood ashes. This lye and glycerin are boiled together in a tub until they are mixed enough to make a yellow-white cake that floats on top of the liquid. This cake is then taken from the liquid and cooled. When it is cool, it is cut into the size cakes that are wanted. Some cakes are large for the clothes washing and some are smaller for bathing. Care has to be taken that too much lye is not put into the soap as it might burn the skin. This is the soap that most women and girls have for bathing and washing their hair.

One of the ladies in Pine Grove gave the following "warshday receet" to me thinking I would not know how to wash clothes.

*1. bild fire in backyard ta heet tub o' rain water. Put rocks 'round fire ta hold tub up frum fire. Put tub on rocks. Fill tub ta top with rain water dipped frum rain water barrel. Fill second tub with rain water for renchin' tha clothes.*

*2. set tubs so smoke won't blow in eyes if wind is pert.*

*3. shave one hole warsh cake lie soap in bilin water. If'n ya all don't got soap, ya all'l haf ta make sum afore ya all kin warsh.*

*4. sort things, make three piles. 1 pile white, 1 pile cullord, 1 pile wirk britches and rags.*

*5. stir flour in cold water ta smooth, then thin down with bilin water. This here is starch ya all'l need fer tha clothes.*

*6. rub dirty spots on scrub board, scrub hard, then bile. Rub cullord, don't bile, jes rench in starch.*

*7. take white things out o' tub with broom stick handle, then rench 'n put in starch. Ring out.*

*8. spred tee towels on grass.*

*9. hang old rags on fence.*

*10. pore rench water in flour bed.*

*11. scrub porch with hit soapy water.*

*12 turn tub upside down.*

*13. go put on cleen dress, smooth hair with side combs, brew cup of tee, set and rest and rock a spell and count blessin's.*

Shoes are generally made by an itinerant cobbler who comes through once a year. The cobbler makes the shoes, but the family has to supply the leather from which they are made. New shoes are generally made for the oldest children.

## Carolyn's Journal

The younger children get hand-me-downs. The same thing is true of clothing. As children grow, their feet have a habit of growing also. Consequently, last year's shoes don't fit this year's feet! Most older children have new shoes by the beginning of the school year or they have hand-me-downs. If for some reason a child doesn't have shoes at the beginning of the school year, they will most certainly have something by the first frost. The hand-me-down business is so popular that the most famous cry of the younger children is that they never get anything new! As the older children grow up and move away or marry, the next child in line gets the new things.

Suzie is very curious about things. She wants to know how things work or are built, so it is natural that her curiosity is aroused by the furnace. She walked over to the furnace to see if she could find out anything about the furnace.

She was in luck for there was a man there that seemed to be the boss and surely must know something about the furnace! She walked up to him and smiled as pretty a smile as she could muster being a little frightened and asked, "Can you tell me something about this furnace?"

"I'll try to tell you anything I can. What is it you want to know?"

"How is the furnace made?"

The two of them talked about how the furnace was made and operated for a while. Finally Bob looked at Suzie and asked, "I hope that helps you some. I'm sorry that I can't tell you more at this time. I am needed elsewhere. I promise that I will tell you more at another time. You wouldn't be the Barkley girl would you?"

"Yes, I am."

"Would you do me a favor?"

"I will if I can."

"Would you please go home and tell your father to report to work over at the stockyard on the hill? I don't have anything for him to do here now and I need workers over there."

"I will be glad to tell him if you will do me a favor."

"That all depends on what you want."

"I like to read anything I can get to read. I would appreciate you letting me borrow any reading material you might have."

"I'll be most happy to let you have anything I have that you can read. I appreciate a young person who wishes to better themselves by reading."

Suzie left Bob and the furnace and headed home to give the message to her father. After she gave the message to her father, she ate lunch, did her noon chores and then left for the other cabins hunting for another girl her age to play with.

She went to one cabin where she saw a girl about her age and size. The girl was in her yard. Suzie went up to her and asked, "Can you play with me?"

"I can, but my mother will want to know who you are. She won't let me play with just anyone."

## Carolyn's Journal

"My name is Suzie and I live in that cabin over there." Suzie pointed to her cabin. "What is your name?"

"My name is Ellen and my father works at the furnace. We just got here yesterday."

"We just got here today. What do you want to do?"

"I've got to see if it is all right for me to play with you." Ellen disappeared into the cabin and returned in a minute. "Let's go look around the place and see what we can learn."

"I'd love to do that. How old are you?"

"I'm thirteen. I'll be out of school in two years. I can hardly wait!"

The girls walked by the furnace and went to the big barn on the hill where all the hay and oxen are kept. The oxen were all in their stalls just resting. Someone had given the barn a cat or two for there were some cats around the barn. Suzie looked at one of the kittens and asked, "That is a pretty kitten. I wonder if I can catch it and pet it?"

"That's not very likely. These cats are usually quite wild!"

Suzie went after the kitten anyway. She reached down and picked the kitten up. It had been napping, but when it felt Suzie's hand around it, it woke up, hissed at Suzie and wiggled and clawed itself free.

"I guess we can't pick them up!" Suzie said this looking at her hand where the kitten had dug its claws in as it jumped to freedom. "Do you suppose that we could train them to trust us?" "That would take a long time I'm afraid. You never told me how old you are."

"I'm sorry! I'm twelve. I have three more years before I graduate. What do you plan to do when you graduate?"

"I don't know yet. I may find me a handsome prince like Cinderella and get married!" She laughed.

They moved out of the barn after scratching some oxen on the nose. They went to the corn crib and looked through the slats at all the corn. The crib was full of corn.

"Do you think you would like to be married?" Suzie questioned.

"I guess I would. I really don't know. A girl doesn't have much of any other choice!"

"That is right. Girls just aren't treated fair! The only thing we can do is get married, have children and take care of the house!"

The girls went up to the granary. They tried to look in, but couldn't. The door was locked and besides that wasn't theirs, so they had no business messing with anything. They walked on and came to a pond. It had been made by damming a small stream.

Suzie asked, "I wonder if a person could swim in that?"

"I have no idea. I'll bet some boys and girls will from time to time."

Suzie looked at Ellen, "I'd like to go now wouldn't you?"

"I'd like to make sure it is safe first!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"That is a good idea. I'll ask the man I was talking with earlier and see what he says. I wonder how many they have?"

"I don't know, but at Union we had at least one. They have to keep enough water to run the engines they have and water to cool the iron and make molds.

"What kind of engines?"

"The engine runs the bellows that blows air into the furnace. Here at Pine Grove the steam engine runs the bellows. "

"You know a lot about these furnaces! How did you find that out?"

"Like I said we were at Union Furnace and I learned some things from being there and I asked questions about things I didn't know."

"I have been asking questions here. I know girls aren't supposed to know anything about the work place, but I am curious."

"I don't know why girls aren't allowed to know the same things as boys. We could probably do as good as any old boy!"

"We could probably do better!" Suzie commented with a sly grin on her face. "The men are just afraid that women will do better than them!" She laughed and Ellen joined in laughing.

"That is probably it! They are afraid that we will do better than they!" Both laughed.

The two of them began to laugh and chat with one another. They came to realize that they had a lot in common. From this time on, the two of them were inseparable friends. If you saw the one, you saw the other one. They were together so much of the time that the people of Pine Grove began to call them 'The Twins'. They didn't look alike. Suzie had dark red hair and Ellen had chestnut brown hair. Suzie had a tanned complexion with freckles. Ellen had a fair complexion. They were about the same height. Suzie had green eyes and Ellen had brown eyes. Suzie was one year younger than Ellen. They were always together and this caused people to think of them as twins. The pastor of the church would ask where 'The Twins' were if they missed a Sunday at church. The teacher at school would assign work for "the twins " to do. Bob began to call them 'The Twins' when he mentioned them for some reason.

Ellen and Suzie enjoyed being called 'The Twins' so much that they would do what they could to look and dress alike. They would try to wear their hair alike. They wanted to have dresses alike, but their mothers could not afford the material.

The girls pleaded with their mothers to get them the material and they would make the dresses. Their mothers told them that was absolutely out of the question.

Ellen looked at Suzie one day and said, "I guess God just doesn't intend for us to dress alike!"

Suzie reluctantly said, "I believe you must be right!" One day a box of used clothing had arrived at the church to be given to the poor and needy in the area. Suzie and Ellen had volunteered to help get the clothes sorted as to size. They were sorting the clothes when they discovered two dresses of the same style, the

## Carolyn's Journal

same color and the same size. They just happened to be Suzie and Ellen's size. Suzie looked at Ellen, "Maybe God does want us to dress alike!" She laughed waiting Ellen's response.

That response wasn't what Suzie had expected. "These clothes are for the poor. We can't touch them!" Ellen was adamant about that.

"That may be so, but aren't we part of the poor?" Suzie wasn't going to let this chance to dress alike slip away easily.

"I don't know!" Ellen was a little reluctant.

"We have wanted dresses alike and here they are! How poor do we have to be to have these dresses?" Suzie had wanted the two of them to dress alike and she wasn't going to give up these dresses easily. Ellen wanted the dresses, but she wanted everything to be done right so no one could say anything.

"Let's ask the preacher!"

They found the pastor and showed him the dresses. Then they asked him, "Are we poor enough to have these?"

The pastor thought for a moment and then said, "Why don't you try them on and see how they fit. Maybe they won't fit." The pastor knew that he had a new home for those two dresses!

The girls disappeared in a flash and returned almost as quickly with the dresses on.

They stood in front of the pastor and said, "Well!"

"Do they fit good?"

They both almost shouted in unison, "Yes!"

"Then I believe God sent those dresses especially for the two of you!"

"May we keep them!"

"It looks like God has answered your prayers. I don't see why you shouldn't keep them!"

Both girls shrieked for joy! It was like Christmas had come and they had gotten the toy they wanted. Beyond any doubt, these were the happiest girls in Pine Grove!

The next Sunday Suzie and Ellen dressed in their new dresses and took a front pew so everyone there could see 'The Twins' dressed alike. When the pastor got up to speak, he mentioned the fact God had answered the prayers of at least two people in the congregation. If anyone had any questions about who it was, they could look for the biggest smiles.

Suzie and Ellen had smiles that grew bigger, but they really didn't have to smile. Everyone knew they had gotten dresses that matched.

Suzie saw Bob one day at the furnace and asked him if they could swim in the pond that she and Ellen had discovered.

"I don't see why not. While the furnace is not operating you and your twin can swim in the pond, but after the furnace has started up, the answer is no because it would be dangerous then. While you are here let me give you this reading material you asked for." Bob picked up an armload of old newspapers, magazines and a couple of outdated books and gave them to Suzie. "All of this

## Carolyn's Journal

for me?" Suzie had never been able to get this much material from one person before.

"Yes. You and your twin may read that and you can keep all of it. I have no further need of any of it."

"You mean that I can keep the books too?"

"Yes. I think you will get some good out of them."

Suzie put the material down and went over to Bob and gave him a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. She looked at Bob and said, "Thank you for this material. I'm so happy I could pop!" With that she grabbed up the material and ran home.

She took the material to her room in the loft and began looking through it. She had just seated herself on the edge of her mattress when Ellen came up to see her. She showed Ellen all of the material and told her that Bob had given permission for them and only them to swim in the pond until the furnace started up.

"He said that we could swim in the pond?"

"Yes! He said that only you and I have permission and we can't tell or give anyone else permission to swim there."

"Just you and me! That makes us special!"

"It certainly does! Suzie pointed to the materials she had gotten so Ellen would see it. He told me to share this material with you."

"He certainly is a good friend! Would you like to go up to the pond now and swim?" Ellen was eager to go to the pond and get cooled off. It was a hot, humid day.

"Sure! Let's go!" Suzie not only wanted to cool off, but she wanted to try out the special privilege they had been given.

With this, they took off for the pond. They felt proud and special to be the only ones that could go swimming in the pond. It made them feel like Bob cared for one or both of them.

When they got to the pond they looked to see if anyone could see them. Being satisfied, they dove into the pond. It was a hot day and the water was warm, but it felt good to be able to swim.

Suzie had learned to swim back at her grandfather's in Virginia. He had taken her to the creek and taught her to swim. Her grandmother had told her not to go near the water until she learned to swim! Her grandfather taught her to swim so her grandmother wouldn't have to worry.

Ellen had learned to swim at Union Furnace. Her mother took her to the furnace pond and had taught her to swim. Ellen's mother was caring about her. She wanted Ellen to know how to do things.

The girls had a lot of fun swimming that day. They were about grown and well developed so they kept a constant eye out for boys. They didn't want some knot headed boy snooping on them. This almost spoiled their fun!

They sat on the side of the pond and let the air and sun dry them. After they were dry, they headed for home. They agreed that they would do this often.

## Carolyn's Journal

They went back to Suzie's cabin, climbed the ladder to the loft and began looking through the material. One magazine had an article that caught Suzie's eye. "Listen to this Ellen -"

### *Lost Harpist Found After Sixteen Years.*

Mrs. Hilda Greene has reappeared after eluding people searching for her. Mrs. Greene was unmarried at the time she was reported to be the World's Greatest Harpist. She has played for royalty all over Europe. Her last performance was here in Boston.

She disappeared because she fell in love and married. She no longer wanted to leave her husband and family. Her only daughter is grown now and has been claimed by European Society as the Most Beautiful Lady in the World!

"The article goes on to tell more about the two of them and there is a lithograph of the two of them. Look!"

"Now that is something isn't it?" remarked Ellen.

"Yes, it surely is! How would you like to be called the most beautiful lady in the world?"

"How would you like to be called the world's greatest harpist?"

"Either one of them would be great wouldn't it?"

"I don't know. If you were the most beautiful lady in the world you would have to be cleaned up and fixed up all the time!"

"Probably so. You would probably have to be a little on the snooty side too!"

"Oh yes mah dear, would you caih to kiss mah hand?" Ellen held out her hand for Suzie to kiss and then laughed. Suzie joined in.

"Even at that, I think it would be great to be called that. You could pick and choose what man you wanted to court. You wouldn't have to take whoever asked you!" Commented Suzie.

"I'm not going to marry just anyone! When I marry it will be because I love the guy and he loves me. I'd rather be an old maid than marry and have to live with a man I didn't love or one that didn't love me." Ellen was very determined about this.

"You really mean that don't you?"

"You better believe I do! Marriage is for keeps and I don't want to spend the rest of my life wishing I had stayed single!"

"A very good idea! How would you feel about being the world's greatest harpist?"

"The same way!"

"What do you think our chances are of ever seeing either of them?"

"I'd say we have about as good a chance of seeing them as we do at becoming Cinderella!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"You are probably right. We are just dreaming about it. We will probably never get to see them, but it would be nice to meet them and be able to tell everyone that we had met them."

"Oh! I would love to meet them. I could really get excited about that, but those chances are slim. What would make you think that two girls from the hills in southern Ohio would ever have a chance of meeting two of the world's leading ladies?"

"I'm still going to keep the article and dream about being able to meet them. I can dream. My grandfather always told me to marry the man I love when I get old enough. Just make certain he has a lot of money so I won't have to work!"

"That may or may not be the case. It would be nice to marry a man with a title or money. The problem is, where are you going to find one like that around here?"

"That is a good question!"

Ellen took the article from Suzie and began to read further than Suzie. "Suzie! You didn't read all of the article! The World's Most Beautiful Lady is not marrying a man of money. She had a chance at a Baron in England, but she is marrying a common working man because she loves him. Now that is my kind of woman!"

"She is giving up society to marry the man she loves?" This seemed incredulous to Suzie. She couldn't believe that someone who has things going her way would give it up.

"That is about what it says."

"I would really like to meet her and shake her hand!"

The girls sat on Suzie's mattress and chatted a while longer. Ellen soon went home to do her evening chores and Suzie came down from the loft so she could do her chores.

The girls went swimming in the pond regularly, always on the watch for a set of unwanted eyes. School began and it was getting cooler so the girls didn't go swimming after school started. They really enjoyed the privilege of being the only ones to swim in the pond.

As usual, the girls did well in school. The teacher was always bragging on how well the girls were doing. Ellen's mother bragged on Ellen and showed her how proud she was. Suzie's mother just said, "I knew you could do it!" Suzie got very little encouragement from home.

The teacher started the spelling bees early because he felt Ellen and Suzie were excellent spellers. If he got two champions at the first part of the year, he could brag about it should he have to start looking for another position.

Ellen was the champion of her class and Suzie was the champion of her class. To be school champion they would have to spell against each other! An evening was set aside for the bee.

Most of the community had turned out for the bee curious as to how Ellen and Suzie would handle one of the 'twins' being better than the other.

## Carolyn's Journal

The bee went on for sometime until Ellen misspelled a word and Suzie spelled it correctly. Suzie was the school's champion speller.

Ellen and her mother came over to Suzie and congratulated her. Ellen and Suzie were still best friends. This hadn't stopped the two from being 'the twins'! Suzie's mother came up to Suzie and said, "I knew you could do it!"

The school year was passing quickly. Before Ellen and Suzie knew it, it was Christmas vacation! The beginning of the blast in the furnace celebration was progressing nicely. Bob had asked 'The Twins' to sit in the front row. They had no idea about why he would want them in the front row, but they agreed to it because he had been so nice to them.

The day of the ceremony came, January 1, 1829, and 'The Twins' had on their twin dresses and were sitting where Bob had designated. The two of them felt very proud to be asked to sit in the front row, right up next to the dignitaries! They felt really special!

The dignitaries all came to the front and sat in the chairs facing the audience. With the dignitaries came Mrs. Hilda Greene and Her daughter Carolyn. Ellen nudged Suzie and motioned for Suzie to look. There, in front of them facing the audience and not more than twenty feet from them, sat the very two they had agreed they would probably never see! They could hardly believe their eyes! Ellen and Suzie didn't hear much of what was said. They just kept staring at Hilda and Carolyn. Carolyn was gorgeous! The day of their becoming Cinderella was getting closer!

Bob introduced the dignitaries. He introduced Hilda and then Carolyn and Joseph.

"In case you are wondering, they are the ones who reside in the big house on the hill! Don't let the big house frighten you. They are as common as a piece of corn bread! Please get to know them."

"The last two people I want to introduce are two fine examples of the youth we have here in Pine Grove. Most of you know them as 'The Twins'. They are no relation, but inseparable. They are two examples of the fine young people we have here in Pine Grove. More than 'The Twins', they are the spelling champions of Pine Grove! Anyone who can spell some of the words they had to spell deserve a BIG hand. Suzie Barkley and Ellen Jones." The people all applauded and Bob asked them to stand so they could be seen. The two of them stood and faced the audience. The people applauded louder and longer.

This really surprised Ellen and Suzie. They hadn't thought of themselves as distinctive in any way. They had a bigger applause than any of the dignitaries! Ellen went up to Bob and gave him a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. Suzie followed, doing the same thing. They told Bob, "Thank you! We didn't expect this!" Suzie remarked, "I'm so happy I could pop!"

Bob exclaimed, "Wow! Had I known I was going to be kissed by 'The Twins', I would have introduced them first!" Everyone laughed at Bob and applauded.

Pine Grove Furnace is now officially in blast.

## Carolyn's Journal

The crowd began to break up. Some of the dignitaries made their way to Ellen and Suzie and congratulated them. Ellen and Suzie were so proud to be congratulated by the dignitaries that they almost didn't see Hilda and Carolyn coming to them.

"You are a pretty young lady and apparently intelligent. Never let anything get in the way of your dreams. Always make women proud of you as you have today. Never compromise yourself so that all people can be proud of your accomplishments. You have a good start. I'll be in touch. Right now and for the next little while I am going to be busy, but I will get with you. That is a promise."

After Carolyn and Hilda had gone, Ellen came to Suzie and said, "I'm never going to wash that hand again!"

"Why?"

"Because that hand shook the hand of the World's Greatest Harpist and the hand of the Most Beautiful Lady in the World!"

"Did you hear the people applaud when Bob introduced us?"

"Yes, and that made me feel really good to be appreciated as much as the dignitaries."

Bob came over to 'The Twins' and apologized, "I'm sorry if I caused you two any embarrassment, but I'm proud of you two. You deserve to be recognized!"

Ellen looked at Bob and asked, "Have you ever been married and had children?"

"I was married before I married Nancy and had a girl Carolyn's age. She and Carolyn were like sisters until my daughter did a very foolish thing and died from it later."

"I'm sorry! I didn't mean to make you feel bad!"

"That is all right. I guess that you two remind me of those two growing up."

"Before I forget it, I have more material that I have found for you folks to read and look at. If you will come by the office, I will give it to you after this is all over."

"We will pick it up in a little while."

Suzie and Ellen started making their way back to their cabins. They were stopped by numbers of people who shook their hands and congratulated them. So many people did this that they were beginning to think they were never going to get to their cabins. Their egos were really inflated by the time they reached their cabins. They felt that for the first time in their life, they were really appreciated and had a chance to become someone great!

Who would have thought that two little hillbilly girls from southern Ohio would have as great a chance to become a dignitary or of the social elite as these two had at this time? They felt that now they had a good chance of becoming Cinderella! They hadn't even thought they would ever have a chance to see Hilda and Carolyn, much less shake their hand! Now they not only had done that, but their lives were about to get intertwined in ways they hadn't known possible!

The next day school resumed. 'The Twins' returned to school and all the other children were anxious to talk to them. In their eyes, 'The Twins' were

## Carolyn's Journal

someone for them to look up to. This was exactly the way Ellen and Suzie felt about Hilda and Carolyn. This was a good feeling, but a lot of responsibility! They would have to take their new position in life serious and make certain that they did nothing to tarnish their image in the eyes of the other boys and girls.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Nine MY ADOPTED DAUGHTER

Joseph is overseeing the steam engine and the engine room at the furnace every day now. The work at the furnace is hot, hard, dusty and smelly work. Burden of charcoal, limestone and iron ore has to go in each half hour and about every twelve hours the furnace is tapped. The iron is molded into pots, pans and stove parts during the week and on Sundays it is molded into pig iron. Men can and do get hurt at the furnace occasionally. It is a constant fear of mine that Joseph might get killed or hurt any time.

Right after the furnace went into blast, a pipe burst that hadn't been put together properly. A spray of steam just missed Joseph and hit a man he was talking to. The other man was burned so badly that he died a few days after the accident. Even knowing what could happen, I know that this is Joseph's chosen line of work. If he is going to be killed, it will be the will of God. I can't sit at home and worry about that.

Erin was three months old when the doctor came to check her and me. He looked at me after checking Erin and said, "Well, I guess by now you know that you are with child again!"

"I suspected as much."

"I think you are going to have twins this time. You should take really good care of yourself and you must put Erin on solid food in seven months. Of course you will have to grind and mash Erin's food. We will talk more about that when it gets nearer time to do it."

The doctor left and I went out to my garden to get it started. I heard a familiar voice behind me. I turned and he said, "You leave garden to us. Me show you how garden. Soil bad. Need leaves, manure. Then be good garden."

"I haven't seen you since mother left. Are you sure you want to work my garden for me?"

"Me sure! You need help! You have more babies. Three boys. You go house. Take care self and babies. We garden."

I left the garden to them. When they had finished with the garden, they left for the woods again. The garden really looked great.

I told Joseph when he came home what the doctor had said. I took him to the back window and showed him the garden.

"You did that by yourself? You shouldn't have done that!" "I was going to, but my Indians came and told me that I didn't know how, so they did it. They also told me that I am going to have three boy babies!"

"I wonder if they could be right this time?"

"They were right about Erin. They have a good record! I don't know how they know, but they seem to have a way of knowing. I'll put my money on them!"

"I will too. Are you going to be able to care for Erin and do well by the triplets?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"The doctor said that we will put Erin on solid food. That way, I can conserve my energy for the triplets."

"What shall we name the triplets?"

"I thought that maybe we could name them Joseph II, Richard and Robert. Joseph II could be called Joey while he is young."

"I like that idea. I wouldn't want one of my boys going around being called Junior. I like Joey." Joseph looked at my stomach and said, "How do you like that Joey?"

I laughed at him. He was acting silly again. Before Erin was born, he would lay next to my stomach in bed and talk to Erin! He goes crazy sometimes.

I said, "Silly man! I suppose now you are going to lie in bed and talk to the boys all night!"

"I might! At least they will know their names!"

"I love you, you crazy father!" I hugged him and kissed him. I would like to start going to church here in Pine Grove. I'd like to get to know my neighbors. Maybe I could help some of them sometime."

"If you want, we will go to church Sunday."

When Sunday came, we were in church. Joseph, Agatha Erin and I. The men sat on one side of the church and the women on the other side. The children sat with their mothers. Joseph sat on one side in his best clothes among men dressed in work clothes. I sat on the other side in my best clothes with Erin among women dressed in street dresses.

Erin was a little doll. She never whimpered or fussed! She sat on my lap the whole time and smiled with her pretty little smile at those who looked at her.

When the congregation was singing the closing song, I must have gotten a little loud. Everyone stopped singing and was listening to me. Even the preacher stopped singing. I was embarrassed! I said, "I'm sorry! Was I singing something wrong?"

"No ma'am! We all love to hear good singing. We haven't heard anyone sing like that in a long time. Why don't you get up here in front and sing this song for us so we can all enjoy it?" Asked the preacher.

"I'm not very good, just loud I guess."

I got up from the pew I was on and handed Erin to Joseph on the other side of the aisle and went up front. They had an organist, but she played way too slow for me so I asked her if she could speed it up a little. She did and I sang all four verses of the song.

The pastor dismissed the congregation and they all came up to me. The pastor had moved to the door as usual and all of the congregation was by me. The pastor tired of waiting for the congregation, so he came from the door and joined the congregation.

The pastor asked, "Will you be available to sing for us next week?"

"I plan to come and attend here as regular as I can. I don't mind singing for you. I just don't want to change anything or cause any trouble."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Honey, you won't be changing anything! You will be adding to the church!" one woman offered.

"You are just being nice!"

The pastor commented, "We have need for someone who can and will sing for us. You sing beautifully. I sense there is some Irish in you somewhere!"

"Mother is Prussian and father is Irish, so I sing like both of them - loud and long!"

The congregation laughed.

"I am with child and if I am well and able, we will be back next Sunday."

Some ladies came up to me and commented, "You are truly beautiful and your daughter looks just like you! I guess you know that!"

I smiled and answered, "I have been told that! Thank you."

"Her little smile is just like yours. She is a perfect copy!"

"Thank you all! We have to get home now, but I do want to get to know each person here and be able to call you my friend."

As we left the little church, I heard one lady whisper to another, "What lovely people! They are not stuck up even though they live in the big house on the hill."

That made my day!

The furnace church houses were built by the company and were for the use of the workers. There was also a company cemetery and unfortunately there was one worker and two children in it. The worker was the one who got blasted with steam next to Joseph and the two children died of some malady or other. They were younger than school age.

Being with child I dare not go where there is some sickness for fear of getting it and giving it to my unborn children. Therefore, I am not able to console those two grief stricken mothers. If I am going to be with child most of the time. I'm going to have to find another way to help.

We started going to church on Sundays regularly and we never wore our best again. I wore street dresses and Joseph wore work clothes.

Each Sunday that I was present at the church, the pastor asked me to sing. The result was that I would pick out the song I was going to sing before I went so if the pastor asked me to sing I was prepared.

The pastor and I had our little meeting to see what I could do to help. I found out what he was doing and then I told him what I planned to do. What we discussed showed me that we both had similar ideas.

Erin was trying to walk now and beginning to talk some. She would see me brushing my hair and she would try to brush her hair. I would pull part of my hair over my right shoulder with the rest down my back. Erin would pretend she was doing the same thing. Her hair was still short and she couldn't actually do as I did. She pretended and then looked up at me and asked, "Pretty?"

I would say, "Yes, you are pretty." She would smile and go off by herself to play.

## Carolyn's Journal

I didn't think about her age and doing these things until mother, father and Gramma came to be with us for Thanksgiving, Christmas and New Years.

Mother noticed how Erin was trying to walk and talk and she said, "That little Erin is just like you! Of course you know that I am prejudiced!"

"Grandmothers and Grammas are supposed to be prejudiced."

Gramma asked, "How could they spoil their grandchildren if they weren't?" We all laughed at her.

The pastor and I had another meeting and came to the conclusion that we needed to raise the esteem of the people at the furnace.

I told the pastor that one thing I would like to do was to have classes for the Indians and teach them to read and write. This would be a small effort to help them fit into our society.

We agreed that we would have to decide how we were going to solve these problems. We would not meet again until after the triplets were born.

My family celebrated Thanksgiving with Bob, Nancy, Gramma, mother and father. This second Thanksgiving was more enjoyable than the first. We had father and Gramma with us this time and we had more to eat.

The Indians had brought us a turkey all dressed and ready to roast. They also brought us a large piece of venison that was ready to roast. I wasn't too confident about roasting venison, so I inquired of Big Eagle.

"Cook like beef. It all ready to roast!"

I found out later that they had spent time preparing the venison. They had taken a knife and scraped all of the little fat pockets from the meat that were just under where the skin had been. Then they soaked the meat in salt water over night. This took the wild taste out of the meat and made it sweeter.

I had started some bread the night before, so I got up early and baked the bread and rolls. When the bread was done, I put the turkey and venison in to roast. It would take them a long time to roast so I would have plenty of time to get the vegetables ready.

Mother, Gramma and Nancy helped me in the kitchen. The men came wandering through and Gramma asked, "Aren't you going to kiss the cooks on the cheek?"

"Of course! A man always kisses the cooks if he doesn't want to get sick from the food!" Joseph laughed as he kissed Nancy, mother, Gramma and me on the cheek. Father and Bob followed suit.

"Now I would say the cooks have all been kissed pretty good!" laughed mother. We set all the food on the table and made the men wash their hands and get ready for dinner. When they returned, we all seated ourselves at the table. Joseph asked Bob to ask the Lord's blessing on the food.

We all ate too much! Everything was delicious. It was just too hard to pass anything up.

Joseph commented, "I believe those kisses paid off! That was a fabulous meal!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"That venison is the best I have ever tasted! I don't know what you did, Carolyn, but that is extremely tasty" commented Bob.

"I did nothing but put it in the oven. My Indians got it ready to roast."

"They can fix me venison any time!"

"I'm with you, Bob, " remarked father

When everyone was through eating, they pushed their chairs back from the table and just sat for a moment. In a few minutes Gramma and Nancy began gathering up dishes and taking them to the kitchen. Mother followed suit and I started to follow and mother instructed, "You go to your room and lie down for a while, Carolyn. You have been on your feet since early morning. You need some rest."

"Yes, Carolyn. You get some rest. I'll bet your legs and feet are badly swollen!" Remarked Gramma.

I knew there was no need for argument and besides, I hate to do the dishes. This was a perfect chance to get out of that. I went up to my bedroom and laid down on top of the spread. I pulled my skirts up and looked at my legs. They weren't swelled much. I pulled my skirts down and turned on my back and laid there.

I was thinking about what the pastor and I had talked about. I had an idea about how I was going to teach the Indians to speak English, but I had no idea about how we could teach the women and girls of the area to have a higher self esteem. I was thinking about this as I fell asleep. I don't know how long I slept, but I was awakened by one of the triplets trying to kick my side out.

"Hey down there! Take it easy!" I yelled.

The room door opened and Joseph came bursting in. "What is wrong, Honey? I heard you yell all the way to the living room!"

"I'm sorry! I was yelling at one of the triplets. He was trying to kick my side out! I didn't mean for you folks to hear me."

"You want me to speak to the boys? They were probably having a fight!"

"I think that is the trouble. You have them spoiled already!" I laughed.

Joseph looked at me and laughed. He knew what I meant. He had been "talking" to them every night.

Between Thanksgiving and Christmas mother, Gramma, Erin and I took time to make Christmas decorations for the house. We made holly wreaths for the windows and front door. We made cut outs of paper for the tree.

Christmas Eve Joseph, Bob and father all went out to get a tree. They came back with a beautiful tree. It was well shaped. All the ladies got busy and began to put the decorations we had made on the tree. Joseph brought out the pop corn popper and began to pop corn to string for the tree. Father and Bob ate so much popped corn that poor Joseph had to keep popping to have some to be strung! I made certain that all of our socks got hung on the fireplace.

We laughed and really enjoyed the day and evening. After the decorating was all over, mother got out the harp and began to play. We all joined in on the singing. This time we had Gramma to help on the soprano singing. It was hard

## Carolyn's Journal

for me to sing because of shortness of breath. After we had finished singing, we all decided to get to bed early because Erin would probably have us all up early.

The next morning we all got up and opened our packages. Erin opened hers with no help. She was such a happy little girl! She kissed each person who had given her a present after she had opened it.

After Christmas was over, we picked up all the decorations and threw them out. It seemed a shame to discard them, but they were of living material and would not last until next year.

We had a New Years dinner and we all ate too much again. It didn't take much to fill me anymore. Gramma and mother were certain that there was something wrong or I would have eaten more.

New Years Eve came and Joseph and I waited for the stroke of midnight. It was our little time of celebration! Mother and father stayed up with us. At midnight, Joseph and I kissed, just like we had three years before. Mother and father looked at us and father remarked, "It means a lot to you two doesn't it?"

"Yes it does, father. I'm tired. I'm going to bed now!" I went up to bed. Took off my clothes, put on my night gown, let my hair down and crawled into bed. There was no way I could do my exercises. I don't know when Joseph came to bed. He had been downstairs talking to mother, father and Gramma. I found out later that they had been talking about me. It seems they were worried. They felt that the triplets were over due.

On January 2, 1831, the triplets let me know that they wanted to see that goofy guy that talked to them each night. I went to my pallet beside my bed. Mother and Gramma came in to be midwives. They were great. Gramma kept telling funny stories. In a while all the boys were born. The Indians had been right again! There were three and they all did look alike! They were identical triplets. I found out later that it was a bit unusual. Usually one is not identical.

Mother kept wetting hot towels and putting them on my tummy. When the delivery was all over, Gramma went out of the room and told the men that I had just delivered three identical boys! Joseph jumped up and wanted to know how I was. Gramma told him I was fine, just a little slimmer. Joseph laughed at Gramma.

When things were all cleared and cleaned up in the bedroom, mother made the men wash their hands in lye soap to get them clean. She didn't want to take a chance on the boys getting something from the men. When the men had washed to mother's satisfaction she let them come into the room and pick up one of the boys. I told them that their names were Joseph II or Joey, Robert and Richard.

The men looked at each baby and one of them said, "How are we going to tell them apart? They all look just alike!"

"We must find some way!" Responded Joseph.

The men began to look the babies over carefully. One would say to the others, "Does yours have this mark?" or "Is yours this big?" Each time the answer was yes. The boys were identical in all ways.

## Carolyn's Journal

After a few minutes, Gramma and mother took the boys from the men and put them back in their cribs Joseph had made. They then showed the men the door. I heard one of the men say to the others as they left the room, "At least you can't name the ugly one after me! They are all good looking!" They all laughed.

Mother and Gramma left the room instructing me to get some rest now.

I was left alone with my three bundles from heaven. They were all doing well. They all went back to sleep and so did I. I was a little weaker than I had thought I might be. I went to sleep thinking about what God had done for me. I thanked God for these three children. God has guided my life and I am just a pawn in his hands. I still am not certain what this princess stuff is all about nor why I can be with child and the Indians know the sex, how many and what they will look like.

I slept for sometime. I guess maybe three hours. I never slept that long before. When I woke up there was mother sitting in a chair nodding. I got out of bed quietly and looked at my three sleeping babies.

Mother woke up and said, "You shouldn't be out of bed! You will have time enough to look at them and hold them later!" I got back into bed. "Mother, did you wish you could have more children after I was born?"

"I could wish, but after your father had the mumps, I knew I could wish in one hand and spit in the other one and know which one was going to get full the quickest! It just wasn't God's will for your father and me to have any more."

"I guess Aggy was as close to being a sister as I will ever get. I just wonder if a real sister would have done like Aggy?"

"If it was God's will she probably would have."

"Then I'm glad I didn't have a sister. I wouldn't want her and the family to go through what Bob went through!"

"That was rough on Bob. She never wrote to him or saw him again after that day the Baron took her home with him." Mother remarked. "You just be sure to stay in that bed! You could start hemorrhaging. You need to stay in that bed the rest of today!"

I told mother, "I must be able to tell them apart some way. They all have names, but I can't tell which name belongs on whom!"

"I'm sure that you'll find a way as they get older, but for now, why don't you write a name on a piece of paper and pin it to them. That way when anyone looks at them, they will know which one they are talking to or working with?"

"That is a good idea, mother! Would you get some paper and a quill, so we can do that?"

Mother got some paper slips. I wrote the names while mother pinned the slips to the boy's gowns. Now we could tell them apart!

Joseph with the help of Bob found a suitable governess for the babies. Minerva was a dream! She did everything and I only had to nurse the babies.

## Carolyn's Journal

Several ladies from the church came by to see how I was doing and how the babies were. They couldn't get over how they all looked alike. I appreciated their visit and told them so.

When they left, mother asked, "Those folks are from the church?"

"Yes they are."

"They really seemed concerned about you. We will all go back to Boston now. Richard has to get back to work and I have a concert tour coming soon."

"Yes, I should get back home and check my place to be certain that everything is all right there" Reported Gramma.

"Surely you all don't have to leave? Couldn't you stay on for a while longer, Gramma?"

"You really don't need me now that you have Minerva. She does a fine job and besides I have to go with your mother if I want a ride home. She will take me as she goes on her concert tour."

"I'll miss you two, but I understand. Just be certain to come back again soon!"

"If I don't miss my guess, we will be back in about ten to twelve months to be your midwives again!" Mother laughed.

Joseph and I took mother, father, and Gramma to Union Landing to catch their boat to Pittsburgh. I didn't envy them. That was a rough trip. I traveled it once and have not been on it since. I do want to go back to Boston some day, but I still haven't got all the wrinkles out from the time I came with Joseph.

The summer months moved along rather rapidly. The Indians had made my garden and it was a beautiful garden. I had plenty of everything to eat. I gave some of my vegetables away to some people who for one reason or another did not have a garden. There is a ruling at Pine Grove that every worker has to have a garden and it has to be fenced in with a five foot wooden picket fence. The reason for the fence is that there is open range in Ohio.

Joseph had raised a hog last year and we butchered, smoked, canned and made sausage of the hog. It was certainly good to have lard to cook with and meat to eat all winter.

Of course you have guessed it by now. I am with child again. The doctor says we may have twins this time. With these multiple births, I am gaining a large family fast! I already have four children and this birth will give me six children, if the Lord wills!

Mother and the doctor are worried about me, but all I can say is that if God wants me to have children like this, then He will surely take care of me and the children!

Every time I am with child I wonder what went wrong with Aggy and why did she die? She was as healthy as I am. These twins will be born the last of October or the first of November.

I saw Big Eagle the other day and he told me that I was going to have two girl babies that will look alike this time. It makes you wonder how he knows these things. He has been more accurate and trustworthy than the doctor!

## Carolyn's Journal

Minerva and I canned vegetables throughout the summer and when fall came we got into canning meat and some late vegetables and fruit. I had lots of beans to can and dry. The onions and potatoes were abundant. The carrots and turnips were extra good. I canned some and put some in the cellar under the kitchen. I put root crops and cabbage into the cellar.

When the weather turned `nippy', Joseph butchered the hog. Bob gave him some help this year, so we gave him some meat to can.

We salted the hams and bacon and then we smoked them in the smoke house. We took some of the hog and made sausage. We always put sage in our sausage. It really turns out well. Joseph said that he is going to raise two hogs sometime and make one whole hog into sausage. If he does that, it will fill our larder full!

November came and just as Thanksgiving was about to be celebrated, mother arrived by herself.

"Where is everyone else?"

"No one else could come. Gramma is busy with some things in Prussia and Richard is busy with a big business deal. I had to ride the bumpy ride alone this time!"

It was a good thing mother came when she did. The day after Thanksgiving, the 26th, the twins were born. I think mother would die if she didn't get to be the midwife for her grandchildren. She loves to tell people that she was the midwife for all of her grandchildren!

The twins were identical. Joseph and I named them Hilda and Herta. Mother likes the idea of naming them after her and her childhood friend. Mother pointed out that I am the only person she knows who has had two separate births in one year bringing five children into the world. The school teacher is going to go nuts trying to figure out how children born at two different times were born in the same year!

I said, "Mother, I haven't been trying for a record of any kind. The Lord lets me have these children and I praise Him for it!"

Mother left and went home again after the first of the year. We took her to Union Landing and watched as her boat disappeared from sight. Mother must really want to help as a midwife because it would take the love of a mother to come over that dusty, bumpy road to be a midwife. It is even cold on the coach in the winter!

The doctor came in February just to check the babies and me. He looked at all of the babies. He poked their little tummies, looked in their ears and mouths. He pronounced the lot of them healthy. He always earns his money when he stops to check my babies. I have more almost than any other family!

He looked at me and said, "Carolyn, you have to start sleeping in another bed! You are just having too many babies and too close together!"

"Doctor, I'll have what the Lord wants me to have. God doesn't intend for me to sleep in another bed from my husband I'm sure. If he had, he would never have told us that when we are married we become as one flesh!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"That may be true, but Joseph isn't having many of these babies! You are having them for him and you are getting run down from having so many of them so close together. You are with child again and you just had the twins. I am worried because this time I think you will have quadruplets. You are going to really have to eat well. You should feed the twins solid food when you can at the usual time. I just hope you can pull this one off because it is a possibility that only one or two of these will be born alive!"

"I'll just have to take whatever God wills. If he intends for me to have four healthy babies, then that is what I will have. If he only intends for me to have one of the four, then that is what I will have!"

"I can see that I am getting nowhere talking with you! I'll talk to Joseph when he comes home!"

"I don't think it will do any good to talk to him now. I'm already with child!" I laughed at the doctor.

The doctor left upset with me, but I am a married woman and although I would prefer not to be with child for a spell, I have to consider my husband and my duties to him. I love Joseph very much and I may not always have him. He could be killed at any time. I don't want to ever have to look back on our life together and feel bad because I didn't do all I could to make him happy.

The next day I was out by the garden petting the animals that came up to me when Big Eagle suddenly appeared. He said, "You have four babies. Two boys, two girls. You take good care."

I had been looking at the animals and asked, "How do you know this?" I looked up to where he had been standing and he was gone again!

I got word that one mother had lost her asthmatic child, so I got myself ready and went to see if I could console her. I took a dish of food as I went. It was probably a blessing that the Lord took the child. The gases from the furnace, the smoke from the meilers, the pollen from the weeds that grow where the trees are cut, the dust from the ground in dry time and the awful mud in the winter and spring - all these things bother asthmatics and work on people with lung problems to where some die. This child was one of them.

Everyone is affected one way or another by these conditions. I praise God that my little ones have not been affected in anyway.

I talked with the mother a little while. I cried with her head on my shoulder as she cried. I could almost feel how I would feel if that were one of my children. I tried to console her and help her, but no one can really console or help someone in that situation unless they have gone through the same thing!

The ladies from the church started coming in with food for Alvira, so I excused myself and left for home. I thanked God for the blessings He has given me!

When I arrived home, Joseph was home and Minerva had needed me to help her. Six babies were too many for her to take care of alone. Erin was walking and talking now and it kept one person busy keeping up with her. She was a handful, but I still love her very much. She was my first born and very precious to me.

## Carolyn's Journal

Joseph had been trying to help Minerva, but he was a little awkward at changing diapers!

I said, "Joseph, we need to think about getting another governess to help Minerva. She is going to need more help, because she can't tend ten children!"

"What are you saying? We only have six."

"I know, but we will someday soon have ten."

"Are you trying to tell me that you are going to have four more babies?"

"Yes"

"You are joshing me, aren't you?"

"No, I'm not, and the doctor is very concerned. He told me that it would be possible that only one or two would be born alive!"

"We will take what God gives us. If he takes them all but one, so be it. I am concerned for you. I'm going to have to take good care of you and make you eat well."

"You won't make me get fat and chubby will you?"

"Of course not. I'll just make you eat well!"

"Thank you kind sir!" I smiled at Joseph. When he got concerned, his eyes got bigger.

"I almost forgot to tell you about the drowning in the pond."

"What drowning is that?"

"There were some boys and girls at the pond today and one of the boys drowned."

"I need to go and console his mother! You should have told me sooner. It is almost dark now."

I went to the parlor to look out the window in front and I heard Bob calling for me to help. I opened the door and there stood Bob holding some girl in his arms. She was bleeding all over her body! I held the door so Bob could bring her in and I had him carry her to Joseph's and my bedroom. I had him put her on my bed. It was then that I recognized that it was Suzie, the champion speller!

"What in the world happened to her?"

"Her mother beat her. She was one of the girls at the pond today."

I sent the men out - Joseph for some warm water and Bob for the doctor. I started taking Suzie's dress off of her so I could tend her wounds. "I am sorry Suzie, but this is going to hurt."

"You are the sweetest person I know Mrs. O'Deigh!"

"You may think that now, but when I start taking those pieces of dress off, you are going to think I'm wicked and cruel!"

"I know you will do your best not to hurt me. I trust you!"

I pulled the dress off her where it wasn't clotted to her. I discovered that she had no under clothes on at all. "Suzie, don't you have any under clothes to wear?"

"Only for good!"

"It makes it easier to get to your wounds, but you should always have under clothes on!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"We can't afford them. Mamma says it takes money to buy the cloth or thread to make the cloth and we don't have much, so we can't buy the material."

"I'll see what I can do about that." The doctor came and examined Suzie.

When he had finished, he looked at me and asked, "Would you step out into the hall with me?"

We stepped out into the hall and he said, "There is no way I will let that girl go home tonight! She is going to have to stay here or somewhere away from home! Will you and Joseph keep her here tonight?"

I looked at Joseph and he looked at me with a smile on his face. "I don't see any reason she can't stay here tonight! She doesn't need to be moved anymore."

"I'm glad you said that. She is going to need more care over the next few days. Those sores are going to heal and scab over. As they do, she is going to find it very difficult to move or even talk!"

"I'll do the best I can, doctor. I hope Minerva can take care of the children while I am caring for Suzie!"

"I don't see why Joseph couldn't stay home and give you some help. We won't need him until the furnace starts up."

"That will give me time with my family that I don't always get. Thanks, Bob!"

"If I were you folks I would send someone to tell her mother where she is and will be for the next few days."

"I'll go. I want to see what a crazy woman looks like!" Replied Joseph.

Joseph got his hat and went down to Suzie's parent's cabin. He knocked on the door. Mrs. Barkley came to the door. She pretended to be crying and asked, "Have you seen my Suzie? She should have been here a long time ago, but isn't!"

"Yes, I have seen Suzie. She is at my house and will be for the next little while! She has been beaten badly!"

"Whoever would have done that to her?"

"I think you know! She will be at my house and I think you best stay away for a while!"

"Why?"

"Because your presence may upset her!"

Mrs. Barkley slammed the door in Joseph's face. Joseph was of a mind to break the door down and give her a beating, then he thought better of it.

When Joseph came home, he was visibly shaken. The doctor started to leave and Bob went out with him.

"That girl needs to be kept away from her mother. If she did this to her this time, what would she do to her next time?"

"I agree with that" Bob said.

Bob and the doctor left.

The next day, Bob, the Doctor and the Sheriff returned and the Doctor had the Sheriff look at Suzie's wounds. It was very evident that Suzie had been beaten with a razor strap or leather belt. The blows could be followed by the wounds. One blow had struck her on the ear, traveled across her nose, cut her

## Carolyn's Journal

eye and stopped at the earlobe on the opposite side of the head. There were other blows to the head and a great number of them on the body. The blows to her body went across her chest, on her back and on her upper legs. Each blow drew blood and made a wound.

After the Sheriff saw all of this, he told me, "I am going to take her from her parents and place her with you, if you and Joseph will have her. She cannot go back to her parents for anything unless it is her personal things she wants. If she does need something from her former home, I want either you or Joseph to go with her and make certain that her mother can't pull anything on her."

"I think she ought to be asked if she wants to stay with us. She may have someone she would rather stay with."

The sheriff went back into Suzie's room and told her she was not going to go back to her home and asked, "Now that we are taking you from your parents for your protection, who would you prefer that you stay with?"

Without any hesitation she replied, "I would like to stay where I am, if it is all right with Miss Carolyn."

It was settled and the three of them left after they advised me to be certain to check with Joseph.

That evening I told Joseph at dinner that we now had another child. He looked at me surprised and asked, "Don't tell me that you have taken some stranger in to care for! You have enough to do without that!"

"I did take someone in, but you know them and she is not a stranger. Not only that, but when she gets well she will be another governess for the children."

"I take it that you are talking of Suzie. I thought that she had already been given to us to take care of. I don't mind taking her in to help after the way her mother did her."

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Ten THE COTILLION

I took care of Suzie and worked in the house and helped with the children. Joseph was spoiling the children rotten! Minerva was doing her best with all of the children, but Joseph was getting them all out of their schedules. I believe he loves them a lot. He just can't stand to hear one cry. Suzie healed fast and was beginning to help. Suzie had agreed to be one of my governesses when she was not in school. I would pay her a salary and take care of all her expenses for school. She readily agreed as she loves to work with the older children. This was welcome help because if Joseph was going to have everything messed up, I was going to need all the help I could get!

Mother had come for a visit and to be here when the quads were born. About a week after mother came, I heard a knock on the door. I went to the door and there stood mother Herta!

"Mother Herta! This is a big surprise! I didn't expect you!" I grabbed her in a big hug and kissed her cheek.

"I like to surprise people. It keeps them on their toes." Joseph came to the door and gave mother Herta a big hug and a kiss on the cheek.

"You keep that up and I'm going to have to find a way to take you from Carolyn! Has she been good to you? If she hasn't, I'll get after her." She laughed.

"She has been too good to me! I love her more now than I did when we were married!" Commented Joseph.

Mother came into the parlor and saw mother Herta. She went directly to Mother Herta and gave her a big hug and a kiss, "I didn't expect you to come. When did you get over here?"

"I just got to the states two weeks ago and came by the Erie Canal. That is a smoother ride. It's more confining, but it is about as quick. I plan to go back that way to Boston."

"I have wondered about that. When we go back after the quads are born, we will try that route," Mother commented.

I was confined to the bed more this time. The doctor told me that I was going to have to stay in bed and rest. All my other babies were being fed solid food - mashed and strained. We were also feeding them some cow's milk with a little maple sugar in it. Maple sugar was all the sugar we had most of the time. The little ones were taking this by spoon and they couldn't wait to get the next spoonful! I had to watch the older children or they would have all the milk and sugar gone. They considered that a treat.

We celebrated Christmas and New Years as usual. It was really a great time together. Joseph and I celebrated New Year's Eve just as we have always done because it means something special to us.

Time was moving along slowly. I wasn't allowed to do anything. All I was allowed to do was sit in a chair or lay in bed. It was like being in jail!

## Carolyn's Journal

One day I put on some heavy clothing and went out into the remnants of my garden. I sat on a rock and petted the animals that came up.

Suzie had missed me and came looking for me. She found me sitting on the rock and started to scold me for being out there. Then she noticed I was holding and petting wild animals.

"Mother! Those are wild animals you are petting! How can you do that?"

Suzie had never seen this before and she was amazed.

"It's a little something I have been blessed with. Here, sit beside me and you can pet them too."

She sat on a rock beside me and began petting the animals also. She was really enjoying it. "I love this mother! I didn't know you could do this!"

"When I leave, you won't be able to either."

"Why is it you can do this?"

"I really don't know, but the Indians say that I am a princess promised to them by God and this is just one of the signs that has been given to prove who I am!"

"Now that is really great! I not only have a new mother, but I also have an Indian princess for a mother! Boy am I ever lucky!"

"I used to think it was great, too, but I have been having babies they predict every year. Don't get me wrong because I love every one of my children, but I would like to go for a while without being with child. This time has been the worst. I can't do anything but sit in a chair or lay in bed!"

"I know you must be bored to death mother, but it won't be too much longer and this will be over." Suzie put her arm around my shoulders and said, "I know a little about being in bed and not allowed out."

"I guess you do! How are you feeling now? Are you back to almost normal?"

"Yes mother. I have the ringing in my ears yet, but even that is getting better." "I'm glad to hear that. What about your eye? Can you see with it?"

"I can see with it but it has everything distorted in it. The trees are not straight. They are all wiggly."

"I was afraid of that, but I guess we praise God that you can even see with it at all!"

"Years ago Ellen and I went to the company barn over there and I wanted to pet a kitten, but it wouldn't let me. I'll bet if you had been there, I would have been able to pet it!"

"You probably would have. I'm getting a bit cold out here. Let's go in. Say good bye to your animal friends."

"Bye-bye all you wonderful animals. We are going in now, but I'll be back again sometime. Please let me pet you!"

I laughed, "I'm afraid they won't let you do that unless I am with you. We went into the house and mother, Joseph and mother Herta were all there to scold me for being out in the cold weather. If I had known then what was planned for my future, I would have cherished each moment with Joseph a little more!"

## Carolyn's Journal

On April 18th, the quads were born. They were smaller than a normal baby, but they were all there and alive! I was thankful they were all alive and well. Mother and mother Herta wrapped each one in a little blanket to keep them warm. Those pink little bodies were a sight to behold! I wanted to get up and give each one a big hug and a kiss, but mother told me I had to stay in bed for at least twenty-four hours.

They brought the babies to me one at a time so I might see and hold them. I hugged each one and kissed its little cheek. They were adorable! There were two identical boys and two identical girls. The boys were named Peter and Paul and the girls were named Shannon and Kelly. I was happy my tenants were living elsewhere, but I still loved them. I now had ten children! That is a big family, but I have to do what God has for me to do.

A week after the quads were born mother Herta called mother aside to tell her some bad news. She said that she didn't want to upset things before the quads were born. Mother Herta asked that mother sit down.

She told us that she had gone by Gramma's house to pick her up to come with her. When she got to her house, the door was open, so she called for Gramma. There was no answer, so she went into the house to look around. In the kitchen she found Gramma on the floor in a pool of blood. She had put up a big fight, but whoever it was had stabbed her several times. She was dead. Mother Herta had taken charge and had her buried next to Grampa. She called the authorities and they came and are investigating. It looked like robbery, but Herta did not know what might have been taken. The authorities were asking that mother come to see if she could find what is missing.

Mother began to have a problem with her heart. I made her lay down and went to get her medicine. She was gasping for breath. I gave her the medicine the doctor had given me so many years before and hoped it would still work. It did and I thanked God for that!

Mother was crying, something I had never seen her do before. Mother Herta began to cry also and the next thing I knew I was crying too. It is a funny thing. If a person in a crowd is crying or laughing, the whole crowd tends to do the same thing! I am going to miss Gramma. She came into my life late, but I learned to love her. She was a very outspoken person.

Mother Herta got control of herself and she told us some more about what had happened to Gramma.

"We had been expecting to come as a surprise to you folks. She was expecting me when she was killed. The authorities suggested that maybe she heard someone knock and thinking it was me, she yelled for them to come in. She was in the kitchen and didn't see who it was. She probably turned to leave the kitchen and turned into the face of the intruder. They probably had words and the intruder grabbed a knife and stabbed her. Meanwhile, she fought the intruder and tried to stop the attack."

"It had to be someone who knew she was going to leave that morning. They probably thought she was gone already." I commented.

## Carolyn's Journal

"Not necessarily! It could have been someone that was planning to rob her and just happened to find her home. She knew them so they had to kill her to keep from being identified." Offered mother Herta.

"I believe you both may be right!" Sniffed mother. "They could have been known of her and they could have also known that she was leaving and just came too soon."

"It doesn't make any difference about the monster that did this. What does matter is that they are caught and justice is done to them.

"I know one thing for certain and that is I am not going back to the castle in Prussia until they find that murderer! He may think I saw something and come after me!"

"I can't say that I blame you, mother Herta. I think the thing for you two to do is go back over there and see if you can find out what was taken and then maybe the authorities can catch him."

"That is right! We will go back by way of the Erie Canal to Boston. That should be a lot more comfortable. Won't you come with us, Carolyn?" Asked mother Herta.

"I would like that, but I feel I am needed by my family here just now. Especially I need to be with the quads."

"I'm looking forward to your being able to come and see me sometime," answered mother Herta.

"I'd be happy if she could just come home to Boston and visit her father and mother occasionally! The problem is that she is always with child and can't come to see her own parents! I think she and Joseph have this all planned!" Mother sniffed.

"Mother! You know better! If the canal way is better I will come that way someday soon. I'll have to bring all the children and their two governesses. You better get your house ready!"

"You come and I'll have the room for you and your army!" Mother laughed. This made her feel better.

"You can come to see me anytime with your army. I have room in the castle for all of them and more!" Laughed mother Herta.

"Knowing her, there probably will be more," remarked mother.

"When are you two planning on leaving?"

"I'll be ready in the morning," Mother responded.

"I can be ready then too" remarked mother Herta.

"I'm sorry to see you folks go, but I understand the need!"

"The sooner we can get over there, the sooner they may find the culprit!"

"I just hope it is not too late already," I commented.

"I hope so too! I just didn't want to say anything that would cause a problem with you, Carolyn. I would have felt awful if I had told this and something had happened to you or the quads!"

"I'm glad you didn't in a way. I got to have you two a while longer and you two got to be together again. You have been a real help during this time."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Mother Herta, I want you to take these pills with you so if mother has another spell with her heart you can give them to her if you are near her."

"Why don't I take two or three of them and leave the rest for you, so you will have some if you need them?"

"Have you got something to put them in? I don't know of a thing I might have." "I have this little pill case that we can use." Mother Herta took three pills and put them in the pill case. This made me feel better because if mother had another spell and mother Herta didn't have the pills, mother could die and I'm not ready to give her up yet! Not without a fight anyway.

The next morning I took the two of them to Portsmouth to the Erie Canal station. They boarded the canal barge after paying the fee and I stood waving bye as the barge started on its trip to Cleveland.

It felt good to be home alone with Joseph and my family. I enjoyed mother and mother Herta, but there is just something about having your own home with just you and your family!

I greeted Joseph at the door when he came home from work. I gave him a big hug and a kiss. He looked at me, smiled and said, "We are alone again, I see!"

"Yes, dear and as much as I love mother and mother Herta, it is good! Don't you think so?"

"I like to have some time to myself in my own home. I believe it is good for us to be a family all to ourselves."

"What do you think about your large family? You have ten children now!"

"I say it is quite big. The doctor talked to me a while back and he said that I was going to kill you if we kept having babies. I love you very much and I don't want to kill you! He suggested that I sleep in another room for a while and give you a rest." "It isn't what we want. It is what God wants. If he wants us to have more children, he will make it so. God will take care of me!"

"I love you too much to take a chance with your life! I'm going to sleep in another room for a while."

"I love you too and I'm willing to take the chance! If God has me the Indian Princess and has the animals protecting me, then he will protect me!"

"Did you ever think that maybe this is his way of protecting you?"

"You have a point there. I'll concede to you and your mighty wisdom, Oh man of my life!"

Joseph began sleeping in another room for a while. I had to appreciate his love for me to where he was willing to sacrifice a part of his love to keep me well and healthy.

I didn't realize how run down I really was until this unwanted separation helped me feel better than I had in several years. I got a renewed vigor to where I went back to my evening exercises and I could do things I hadn't done for several years.

Suzie noticed how much better I looked and seemed to feel. "Mother, you are looking great and radiant! Are you going to start classes again?"

## Carolyn's Journal

Before the quads were to be born, I had been holding classes in the house for the Indians to learn to read and write. I felt that if they could read and write, they would fit in with the white people and the white people would have no animosity toward them.

I was wrong about the animosity, but I was right about their blending in better. I wanted the Indian children to have a chance to go to school. Some parents in the community told me plain that if Indians started attending school, they would pull their children out of school. I decided to teach the Indians in my home. The people of the community knew this as I did not try to keep it a secret and they held no ill will toward me for it. They just didn't want the Indians mixing with their children.

I taught the Indians during the morning hours while the other children were in school. After school was out in the afternoon and before evening chores, I took several girls who had a desire to better themselves and taught them. These girls were taught how to operate in society. I promised them that if they worked hard at the skills presented and mastered them, I would have a cotillion for them. This would be a way to introduce them to young men of the social set.

Suzie was the first to want to take the course. When Ellen heard of it she signed on as did Lori. When other girls found out about it, they came to sign up. I didn't refuse anyone. I made three requirements that each girl was going to have to meet to finish the course. They would have to master the skills and training portion of the program. They would have to make a dress for the cotillion. They would have to attend the cotillion.

Some girls were from very poor families and would not have the money to buy the material for a dress. One of the girls began to cry and told me that she couldn't get the material for her dress, so she would have to drop out.

I called for all of the girl's to listen to what I was going to say. Please don't leave the course because you can't afford to buy the material for a ball gown. I have some donors who will donate material for the dresses, so you can fulfill that requirement. The girl's faces all began to get smiles on them again. For the first time in their life they were loved by someone who was going to give them a chance to better their lot! Some of these girls had been rebuffed and down trodden so much that they were beginning to think there was no way out. They looked at me with hope in their eyes. I couldn't fail them! I wasn't sure who my magical donors were going to be, but I assumed they would probably be Joseph and me!

I started working with the girls before I was put to bed because of the quads. I had to stop all my classes before the quads were born with a promise that I would restart them when I was able after the quads were born.

Not all of the girls would finish my course for various reasons. This didn't bother me because I knew that they had learned some things that they could use even if they married and lived in a cabin with a dirt floor. It would at least elevate their standards to where they would improve their lifestyle.

## Carolyn's Journal

Ellen was visiting Suzie when I asked them to please notify the others that the classes would resume.

Suzie wanted to know if she could go with Ellen to let the other girls know. Then she wanted to know when I would start them. I told them to tell them to meet with me at my house the next afternoon after school.

Suzie and Ellen disappeared so fast that I thought they had been taking lessons from Big Eagle! The next afternoon my parlor was filled with all of the girls I had been working with, plus a few more!

"I'm sorry girls. If you were not in this group that I was working with before, you must leave. When this class is over, I will start another one for other girls that may be interested. I just can't do two classes at a time and you have missed too much to be part of this class. This class will be over when we have the cotillion. That is graduation night!"

"Miss Carolyn, do you know how long that will be?" one of my young hopefuls asked.

"It may be as long as two months and it could be less. If these girls are not ready by then they never will be!"

"Thank-you, Miss Carolyn. May I leave my name so you won't forget me?"

"Any of you that want to take the next class may leave your name. Suzie would you and Ellen take their names for me?"

"We would be glad to, mother."

Suzie's mother and Ellen's mother sat in on these classes. They both began to take better care of themselves and their home. Ellen's mother fixed the yard around her cabin and planted flowers. Other parents saw the improvements and began taking better care of themselves and their cabins. This was what I had hoped would happen.

I reviewed some skills we had worked on to see if the girls could still do them. One of these skills was walking down stairs with a book on their head. This was to give them proper posture. I couldn't have them enter the cotillion like cow or a plow horse!

The girls all went up the stairs, turned, put a book on their head and came down the stairs. I made them keep the book on their head and go up the stairs. Most of them thought this was great fun. They helped one another and worked on it until they had all mastered it. Their enthusiasm reminded me of the class I had done this in at Mrs. Smith's Finishing School. I still chuckle when I think of Mrs. Smith and how much she reminded me of a red headed wood pecker!

I worked on the girl's manners at the table. I taught them how a gentleman seats a lady at a table. I taught them how to set a table for guests. I taught them the protocol for seating dignitaries. I taught them how to ride a horse side saddle as a lady. Most of them had never ridden a horse side saddle nor had seen it done. They thought a lady didn't ride a horse or if she did she rode like a man - straddle the horse's back.

I taught the girls how to take care of their hair. I taught the girls how to dress in a beautiful gown to enhance their own looks. I taught them exercises to

## Carolyn's Journal

do each night to keep a nice figure to where they wouldn't have to wear one of those awful corsets. We will probably find that many young girls will be injured from wearing those things. Some of the girls objected to doing exercises. I looked at them and asked, "How many children do I have?"

This caught them by surprise and they answered, "Ten!"

"Now look at me. Do I look like I have ten children?"

They looked at me. I faced them and then turned sideways. "No Ma'am you don't!"

"That is because of these exercises. I am trying to teach you how to keep your appearance. If a woman gets fat and sloppy because she doesn't take care of herself, the man she marries may start looking for a more youthful looking woman. If you have a youthful appearance they will be more than likely to continue romancing you and look no further. If you want a man and you want the marriage to last with him loving you, you have to work for it!"

The girls learned rapidly. I taught them how to be a good conversationalist on any subject a man might bring up. I taught them morals and manners. I taught them anything that would make them a good wife and hostess in a social setting.

I started the girls into making their patterns for their gowns they wanted for the ball. I found out what color cloth they all wanted and the type material they wanted. I went to the store and ordered it for them.

The girls worked on their patterns for their gowns and when they had finished the patterns the material was in. I paid for the material and brought it home. I figured how much material was needed for each dress, measured it out and gave it to the girls. The girls that could, paid me and those who couldn't, got their material anyway. We took the patterns and cloth to the dining room table. I pulled off the table cloth and laid the material down one gown at a time so we could mark out the gowns' parts. When one girl's parts were all marked, she moved her material to the other end of the table and she began cutting out the parts. We kept this up until all the gowns' parts had been cut out.

I showed the girls how to take tiny stitches so the seams would hold. This was a little difficult for the younger girls, but they managed. I reminded the girls that stitches too close to the edge of the material or too large might pull out and embarrass them. They didn't want that, so they worked very carefully to sew the gown properly.

During the day, after the Indian class and before the girls class, I sent out invitations to every iron master and family in Ohio and Kentucky. I invited some others that I knew would like to come and meet the girls. Then I asked Bob if we could use his place for the cotillion.

"I was wondering if you were going to get around to that!"

"If you prefer I can have it at my place, but I thought you would want to be identified with this some way. As I say we can have it at my place!"

"I haven't said anything yet! You have gone to jumping to conclusions! Nancy and I would be most happy to host your cotillion. We will be happy to put

## Carolyn's Journal

some of your guests up for you. We think this is a wonderful thing you are doing for these girls. This will at least give them some encouragement!"

"Thank-you Bob. I'll let you know which of the guests will be staying with you." I kissed him on the cheek.

"Why do I get the feeling that I have just been had?" He smiled.

I smiled at him as I left. I am going to have to change my tactics with him. He is getting wise to me!

The girls got their gowns sewed, fitted, adjusted and everything ready for the cotillion. They looked great in their gowns. They had done a great job on their gowns and in pressing them. I found some cheap jewelry for them to wear - necklaces, bracelets, fancy combs and the like. I particularly wanted Ellen and Suzie to look their very best, so I got them each a cheap tiara. Suzie said they were so happy they could pop.

The night before the cotillion, we had a dress rehearsal at Bob's house. The girls went upstairs to a room that Nancy indicated and they put on their gowns and fixed themselves as they would be the following night. They were all excited.

"Ladies! You will be announced by Bob at the foot of the stairs. You know how to walk down the stairs and throughout the evening. When you arrive at the bottom of the stairs tomorrow evening you will have a young man take you by the arm and lead you to the ballroom. Remember! You are ladies! Not girls and certainly not women!"

"Let's go up there! My dinner is getting cold!" Bob yelled.

"Anytime Bob! Remember to smile pretty now, girls!"

Bob announced the girls as they came to the head of the stairs. The girls did remarkably well. When they returned upstairs to change back to their street clothes, I told them, "That was excellent girls. Any boy that doesn't want you is a true, died in the wool Snob! Go home now and get some good rest if you can. I wish you luck and I'm proud of you!"

When the girls had all gone, Bob and Nancy called me over to them in the living room. Bob said, "Carolyn, you do a lot for these people here at Pine Grove, but I want you to know that Nancy and I think you have really outdone yourself this time. Those girls were a lot better trained than any I have ever witnessed at their 'coming out' cotillion! I wouldn't be surprised to find some of those girls marrying some of society's most eligible bachelors!"

"Carolyn, I haven't known you as long as Bob has, but you certainly do wonders. I believe you could make a silk purse from a sow's ear! If those girls do as well tomorrow night as they did tonight, it is going to be hard to tell the socialites from the common girls!"

"I thank you folks and thank you for letting me have the cotillion at your place. You are great friends!"

I went home to my family and Joseph. Some of the quads had decided it was time to eat and were crying. Joseph was trying to console them. I went into the nursery and started feeding the quads. I took the two noisiest ones first. Soon all was quiet. I was tired, so when I was finished with the little ones, I went

## Carolyn's Journal

to bed. When I got into bed I was startled to look up and see someone standing beside my bed with a pillow in hand. It was Joseph. "What are you doing here?"

"I haven't been with you for months! I think my self-imposed exile has elapsed!" He smiled.

I pulled the covers down on his side of the bed, so he could get in. "I'm glad you called that self-imposed exile for I never told you to leave me!"

"I was taking the doctor's advice!" Joseph said as he climbed into bed.

"Have you ever known the doctor to be right?"

"Not on you and the children!"

"I have a lot to do tomorrow for the cotillion. I need to get some rest. Good night."

"You mean you aren't even going to kiss me good night? All I get is a good night?"

"I haven't seen you in bed for so long I forgot!" I leaned over him and kissed him good night.

The next day I was busy all day getting things ready for the Cotillion. I got some mothers to help decorate the ballroom. I assigned mothers various jobs. The jobs weren't that important, but I was trying to let the mothers have a chance to see their daughters all fixed up. The mothers were happy about getting that chance.

I had to stop occasionally and go to the nursery to tend to my family. Joseph, Minerva and Suzie were all happy to see me.

"Suzie! You need to be getting ready. You need to fix your hair. Minerva and Joseph can take care of the children. It is only going to be for this one evening and I want you to be at your very best!"

Suzie stopped what she was doing and went to her room to begin her preparations.

I went over to the preacher's place and told him I wanted him to be present so he could observe my ladies in the cotillion.

"I was wondering if you were going to invite me. I really want to see this. I have heard so much about what the girls have learned that I want to see it put to use!"

"I think this is what we were talking about before. Now you can come and see if you think I have succeeded!"

"I'm sure you have."

Afternoon came and the guests were arriving. I took part of them to Bob's mansion and I kept part of them at my place. My place was beginning to have so many people that I was bumping into them trying to get everything ready. They wanted to chat a little or they wanted to know how to get to Bob's place or other things. I had to be gracious and still get them out of my way. They all wanted to be in the nursery and look at the children just as I was getting ready to feed the quads. I managed to get through all of that and get them down to Bob's in time for the cotillion. I don't know what I would have done without Minerva and Joseph. They really came through for me.

## Carolyn's Journal

I went down to Bob's dressed for the cotillion and went up to the girl's room to make certain they were all there.

The girls really did look beautiful! I was proud of them! As Bob introduced them, they came down the stairs with a smile on their face and an imaginary book on their head. When they reached the bottom of the stairs a young man came up and took them by the arm to the ball room. The young men were choosing the one they wanted to escort and spend the evening with.

When Ellen came down the stairs, two young men came to escort her. They looked at each other and Ellen just held out both arms for them to each take one. They both escorted her to the ballroom.

The cotillion went well. The ladies were all excited about the young men they had met. Some young men wanted the privilege of courting some of the girls. Ellen had met a young man that she had fallen madly in love with. He wanted to court her in my parlor and I agreed.

Ellen married the young man she had met at the cotillion. She was so happy. She reminded me of Joseph and me. She and her husband appeared to be so much in love.

Suzie came to me one day and said, "Mother, most of the girls you taught have married a fellow that they met at the cotillion. I am the only one that hasn't married or is getting married. The only young men left here to choose from are the worker's sons. That puts me right back where I started!" She began to cry.

I had seldom seen Suzie cry. She had to be feeling quite badly or she wouldn't cry. I put my arm around her shoulder and said, "Suzie, if you learn to play the harp, perhaps you could go with mother on a tour and meet your handsome young prince!"

Suzie perked up and stopped crying. She said, "I will start practicing harder than ever. You have encouraged me mother. I love you!" She hugged my neck and kissed my cheek.

I had gotten a letter from mother and hadn't had time to read it before the cotillion. I happened to see it as I was going through things on my desk. I opened it and read it. She and mother Herta had gotten back to Germany and when they visited the authorities, they discovered that they had arrested a man they suspected of killing Gramma. Mother looked at the man and discovered that it was the man they had hired to take care of the place when Gramma was away in America. They checked and found that he had some things from Gramma's house. There wasn't too much question about him being the murderer. The legal procedure would now run its course.

Mother said that she wanted to come to visit when my next baby was born. She didn't know that there wasn't any being expected then!

Joseph and I were sleeping together again and unfortunately I was quite certain I was with child again. I went to the garden to pet the animals one afternoon. Big Eagle popped out of the woods and told me that I was with child again. This time I would have twins, but I would unfortunately have a very hard

## Carolyn's Journal

time, but not with the babies. I had been looking at the animals as he told me this and when I looked up to ask him what he meant, he was gone as usual.

I didn't know what to think of his prophecy. This was a different prediction. What hard time was he referring to? I went inside and told Joseph what had been said.

"I have no idea about what he meant except you will have twins this time."

"I expected the message about the twins, but the last part is what bothers me!" "Don't worry about it! I'm sure we will find out when it happens!"

"I'm worried about you! I'm afraid he means that something is going to happen to you! Please be careful at work! I don't think I could get along without you!" I looked at him and cried a little.

"Now honey, you know I try to take care of myself. If God wants that I am taken, there is nothing you or I can do about it!"

"I just can't bear to think of living without you!"

"What shall we call the new arrivals? What did he say the twins would be?"

"He said they would be a boy and a girl."

"Let's call the girl Colleen and the boy Earl after your old Baron."

"That sounds good to me. I want you to make this decision. I'm afraid it may be your last."

"Don't worry, honey! If it is God's will we can't stop it no matter what we do."

I went out of my way to be good to Joseph and did all he wanted done. I just had that awful feeling and I couldn't shake it! Joseph just laughed at me.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Eleven A GREAT TRAGEDY

Joseph had been concerned about the fact that boilers were being made for all kinds of uses that did not have any kind of safety device to keep them from blowing up from too much pressure. He wrote the governor of the state of Ohio. He suggested that a law should be passed by the state legislature requiring a relief valve be placed on all boilers manufactured in this state or other states selling boilers in this state. In about a week he got a letter from Governor Lucas. The Governor requested that Joseph come to his office for a visit and conference concerning the law Joseph suggested.

Joseph was excited and happy. He was going to go talk to the governor about his concern! Joseph got a few clothes together and was all set to go the day before he was to confer with governor Lucas. He got a horse and buggy ready. He came into the house less than his usual enthusiastic self.

"What is wrong, honey?"

"I guess you know that I'll be gone for several days. This is the first time I have been away from you and my family for very long! I'm going to really miss you and the children!"

"I know that you will miss us and we will surely miss you! I want you to take good care of yourself and come back as soon as possible. We will all be watching for you."

He took me in his strong arms and drew me up close and kissed me. "I'm going to miss you folks. You all take care now!"

We walked together into the nursery and he called all of the older children to him. He said, "I've got to go see governor Lucas about a law I would like to see passed so people will be safer around boilers of all kinds. I'll be back in a few days, but I want all of you boys and girls to mind your mother and your governesses. When I get back I may have some small gift for you all, if you have been good!"

"We'll be good father. We will be good just because we love you!" Erin spoke up as usual.

"Does that go for all of you? Is this the way you feel about it or do the rest of you feel differently?"

"No, father. We all feel the same. We will be good!" agreed Joey.

All the other children nodded their heads as to agree with what was said.

A tear came to Joseph's eye as he stood up and left the nursery. When Joseph came out of the nursery, he looked at me, "That really makes it hard to leave!"

"You have to leave if you want to get there by tomorrow in time to see the governor."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I know honey. I'm just putting off what I have to do. It is hard to leave all of you, but I have to if I am going to get the law passed. I wish I could take all of you with me, but you shouldn't travel just now."

"I wish we could too, but it is impossible this time. Maybe next year we can all go somewhere together."

"We will have to see what next year brings." He took me in his arms and gave me a hug and kissed me bye. He got into the buggy and drove off without looking back. I knew he was crying and didn't want me to see him.

I cried seeing him drive off. I couldn't help but wonder if maybe I would never see him again! What Big Eagle had said really bothered me. I couldn't let the children or Joseph know how disturbed about that prophecy I really was! I had to go on living as though I had never heard that prophecy.

While Joseph was gone, I got my Indians together for my reading school and I got another group of girls together who wanted to take my finishing school class. I began these classes and it helped to get my mind off my fears.

I taught the Indians to read, write and do arithmetic. They threw themselves into learning these things. The girls began learning the things they needed to learn in the finishing school. I didn't have very many girls this time, but the ones I did have were enthusiastic about the possibility of marrying a man above their station in life. They had seen what had taken place from the first class. Some of their sisters were involved.

In a few days in the evening I heard the clatter of horse's hooves on the drive. I looked out the front window and there was Joseph driving up. I opened the front door and flew out onto the porch with my arms open to give Joseph a big hug and a kiss. Joseph hurried off the buggy and rushed into my arms. "I never knew how much I would miss you!" He hugged me tight and kissed me. "I guess you know that this is the first time you and I have been separated like this since we were married! I never knew how much I would miss you!" He hugged me tight and kissed me with tears in his eyes. Not tears of sorrow, but tears of happiness and joy.

"We certainly missed you too!" I said as we hurried into the nursery. We entered the nursery and when we walked in, the children saw Joseph and ran to him and put their little arms around his legs. He squatted down so they could hug his neck.

After all the hugs and kisses, Erin looked him in the eye, "What did you bring us?"

Joseph looked at her, "What makes you think I would bring you anything?"

"You promised us something if we were good. We were good, weren't we mother?"

"Yes you were. You were very good!" I confirmed.

Joseph smiled and reached into his big shirt pocket, "I guess I'll have to give you something then, won't I?" He pulled out several pieces of licorice and gave the older children each a stick.

## Carolyn's Journal

Erin came over to him and kissed his cheek, "Thank you, father." The other older children followed suit.

"If I had known that I was going to be kissed by all of you, I would have brought you more!" He laughed.

The children just looked at him and giggled as they sucked on the licorice.

As we left the nursery, I was holding Joseph's hand and I told him that I had started my Indian and young ladies classes again. He looked at me and asked, "You aren't rushing things are you? I don't want anything to happen to you, you know!"

"I'm not rushing things. I have excellent students! They are the best!"

"I just want to make certain that you are going to be all right. I have some good news to tell you. I want you to sit down so I can tell you about my trip."

We were in the living room then, so I sat in my chair.

He began, "I got up to Columbus, got a room the night before the meeting as planned. The next morning I got up and looked around Columbus until time for my meeting with the governor."

"I went into the governor's office to see him and there was a fellow there who asked me what I was doing there. I told him and he said, 'The governor is expecting you. Go right on in.' I went into the big office and there were several people sitting in his office. He got up and asked, 'You are Mr. Joseph O'Deigh I presume?' I answered him that I was. The governor requested that I sit in a chair that he pointed out. I sat and then he introduced all of the men in the room. They were the leaders of this state! I felt mighty insignificant in their presence, but I was bound that I was going to be heard!"

"Mr. O'Deigh, the Governor began, 'I have a letter that you wrote to me about a concern you have about boilers blowing up and killing people. We, as leaders of the state, are also concerned! Suppose you tell us some of your background and why you are concerned."

"I told them that I had been a student and apprentice to a man who had worked with Watt on the first steam engines. The men were impressed by this and asked me questions about how I had happened to be with this man. I told them and then they wanted to know what Watt believed about the steam engine and steam. I told them about how he felt low pressure steam could do as much as high pressure steam. However, there is a trend toward high pressure steam. Boilers that were never meant to hold high pressure steam are blowing up! Men are being killed, in some cases women and children are also being killed! This could all be prevented by a law that would make manufacturers put a pressure relief valve on the boiler when they manufactured it. A valve of this type will let out excessive pressure beyond what the boiler is capable of withstanding."

"The men in the room all looked at one another and nodded agreement. The governor looked at me, 'I think you have an excellent idea! What is the consensus among you gentlemen? Can we get a bill passed that would do what Mr. O'Deigh suggests? '"

## Carolyn's Journal

"One of the men spoke up, I don't see why we can't, but how are we going to enforce it? If we don't enforce the bill, it will just cause the manufacturers to disregard the law!' The governor looked at me. I told them that they needed a group of men commissioned by the governor to check the new boilers and make certain they were built to the standards of the law. If a manufacturer is building to less than the legal standards, you can give them a twenty-four-hour notice to comply. They must bring all of their boilers up to standards or they will be shut down! If a company is using one not meeting standards set up, they must stop using it until it does comply."

"The governor looked at me and said, 'I don't know of anyone more informed on the matter than you. You work on the standards you think should be set up and we will work on the bill and get it passed. We will need those standards as soon as you can get them up to us. Once the bill is passed and the standards set, we will need to get a department or bureau set up for enforcing the statute. Would you be interested in heading up that department or bureau, Mr. O'Deigh?'"

"I told him I would have to think about it and talk it over with my wife. So now you have heard the story, what do you think?"

"It would be a good deal for you! Would it come with a salary offer?"

"Yes. It would probably pay an excellent salary because I would be a head of state department."

"Would we have to move from Pine Grove?"

"That all depends on how the office is set up. If it can be set up from here, we wouldn't have to move."

"I don't want to leave my beautiful home here! The people here still need me."

"I need to get the standards written up and sent to the governor. I'm going to work on them and you can continue as you are until I know more about what the requirements will be for the position."

"Very good! Maybe you can work out the requirements for the job while you are at it!" I laughed.

Joseph worked on the standards. They accepted Joseph's standards without question and they became part of the law. Also included with the bill was the creation of the position of head inspector and several sub - inspectors. The head office was to be in Columbus. This made it a rough decision about whether Joseph should take the job or not.

I didn't want to stand in the way of Joseph getting an excellent job with the government. I had to decide whether I would go with him and leave the house or stay in Pine Grove. What should I do?

Joseph came to me in a day or two and told me that he really wasn't interested in the job. He said that he would write the governor and inform him of his decision.

"Are you certain you want to do this, Joseph? This would give you a good job doing what you like the best. I don't want you to give up this chance because

## Carolyn's Journal

you think you are going to make me leave Pine Grove. I left Boston with you. I didn't like it, but I did. I won't like this, but I will do it if you say so!"

"I know that, darling. I have looked at it from another point of view and it doesn't look as good. Your father is paying me an excellent salary to do the work I do for him. I don't have any problems with those I work with. I get along fine with them all. I don't have to worry about what political party is in office. My job is secure, but if I go to the state my job would not be secure. We would have to give up our beautiful home for nobody knows what kind of house. I believe I will write the governor and tell him that after serious thought on the subject, I have decided not to take the position."

"Are you sure of what you are doing?"

"Yes. I have thought about it and prayed about it and this is what I feel I should do. I'll tell the governor that if he wants me to inspect boilers in this area for him, I will do that on a temporary basis. As for head man, No."

"I want you to feel sure of what you want to do. I don't want you to feel obligated to me or the family. We will do whatever you decide."

"I do feel obligated to my family! They are a part of me, remember? I am not going to do another deal like when we had to come to Pine Grove to begin with!"

"This move was God's will! I have enjoyed being here and I certainly have enjoyed you and the children! Any other move we might make would prove to be the same if it were God's will.

My classes were progressing nicely and the governor had asked Joseph to inspect the boilers in Lawrence and Jackson counties that pertained to the furnaces. He would be through when he had inspected them and the iron masters had complied with the law.

Joseph went to make his round of inspection of the furnace boilers. He had inspected Pine Grove. Now he was headed to others farther away. There had been several furnaces built in the last few years. Etna Furnace was built in 1832 and went into blast. Buckhorn, Hecla and Mt Vesuvius Furnaces were built in 1833 and put into blast. It was one of these furnaces that Joseph was going to inspect. He always stopped to see the iron master first and explain his mission. Then he went to the engineer. He had done this and the engineer was very upset that he was going to have to put the relief valve on the boiler.

"Why the need for a valve like that?"

"For your and my safety! We have had a lot of men killed all over because they ran too much pressure on the tank. How much are you running?"

The engineer went to look and at that time the boiler blew up. Pieces of the boiler flew everywhere and hot steam was all over the place. The explosion hurled Joseph against the brick smokestack and pieces of the boiler tore relentlessly through his body, killing him instantly! The engineer was also killed and two assistants were badly injured to where one of them died later and the other one lost an eye. The Iron Master came to survey the situation

## Carolyn's Journal

instantaneously. After the men were extricated from the rubble, he went to Pine Grove to tell Bob so the two of them might go and tell Carolyn.

After the two had told Carolyn the bad news, she just looked at them stunned for a few minutes and then asked, "You are not pulling some cruel joke on me are you, Bob?"

"No, Carolyn, this is not a cruel joke! You know me better than that! Now I will help you all I can during this time and I'm sure John will also. I know this is going to be rough on you, being with child. I'll have Nancy come and sit with you and help you."

"That will be nice, but will it bring my Joseph back?"

"No, it won't. She can help you should you need sudden help!"

The two men left and Carolyn went to the nursery to tell the children. This was what she had feared the meaning of Big Eagle's prediction had meant. She had hoped that it wasn't, but it was. Now she had to face the future alone. She no longer had Joseph to be at her side.

She went into the nursery and called all the older children to her. She was crying as they came up to her. Erin saw her mother crying, she was old enough to know something was really wrong. She put her little arms around her mother's neck and asked, "What is making you cry, mother?"

"Children, I have some very bad news to share with you. I don't know how to tell you except to come right out with it. Your father was killed this morning in a boiler explosion and he won't be coming home anymore!" Carolyn couldn't continue until she had cried some more. The children all gave her a big hug. She instinctively gave them a big hug in return. She was just numb. She was doing things like it was a bad dream.

"You mean that we don't have a father anymore?" asked Joey.

"Is that what you mean, mother?" inquired Richard and Robert.

"That is correct. Now we have all got to stick together and love one another more than ever. We don't have your father to love us too!"

Suzie and Minerva came up to Carolyn and asked, "We will miss father too! Does this mean that you must let us go?"

"No! I'm going to need you more than ever now! Don't you dare leave me now!"

"We wouldn't think of it, would we Minerva?"

"No. We love you and the children like our own family. Suzie and I have just agreed to stay on even if you can't pay us anything. We love all of you folks" remarked Minerva.

"We all love you two as though you were our older sisters!" stated Erin.

There was a knock at the door and Carolyn went to see who it might be. She opened the door and there stood some ladies from the church. The preacher was with them.

Carolyn's eyes were all red from crying. She looked at this group and asked, "What can I do for you folks?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"This is one time it is not what you can do for us. It is what can we do for you? We just heard the news and got together to come and help you in any way we can" informed the preacher.

"That is very sweet of you people! You are the best friends anyone could have! At this moment I don't need anything, but you can come in and sit if you wish."

They all came in and sat in the parlor. In a moment there was another knock at the door and there was Nancy. She had come to sit with Carolyn just in case Carolyn would need someone fast. Carolyn was with child and news of this kind could cause complications with the unborn perhaps coming early.

In a few minutes someone else knocked at the door. It was Big Eagle and his wife. "Me come tell you we sorry! Wife work in kitchen and clean house. Me work in barn and garden. You be all right!"

"I appreciate this Big Eagle, but I won't need help in the house! You can help in the barn and garden if you like."

"Wife cook for you!"

He and his wife went into the kitchen then he marched off to the barn to work. They didn't take no for an answer! The others saw how the Indians did and left the parlor to see what they could do around the house. Some went to the kitchen and some went to the nursery to help there. Some went to dusting the furniture in the parlor and living room. The parlor had emptied and the house was full of people doing what they could find to help Carolyn.

More people came to offer their sympathy and they told Carolyn that if she knew of anything they could do for her, to just let them know. Carolyn told them that all she needed and couldn't have was Joseph.

All the people who came to help finished what they were doing and excused themselves to go home. The only ones who stayed on were Big Eagle, his Wife and Nancy. Carolyn told Nancy, "I have Big Eagle and his wife here to be with me. Why don't you go on home and take care of your family?"

"I do have something to do at home. I hope it doesn't seem rude of me, but I will go home if you don't mind."

"I don't mind. I appreciate you coming to be with me."

Carolyn sat at her desk and wrote her parents a letter telling them they should come as quickly as possible. The hardest time came when it came time for Joseph to return from work. Carolyn sat in the living room listening for the door to open and hear the usual greeting from Joseph. This had to be a bad dream! It just couldn't be real! The door didn't open and Joseph didn't come in. She went to the window and looked out. She was hoping that somehow this report was wrong. It was true! The truth hit her more fully than before. She burst into tears and ran to her bedroom, threw herself on the bed and sobbed uncontrollably.

The next morning she woke up without Joseph beside her. She had cried most of the night. She had to get up and arrange for the funeral. She now had all the responsibilities of the home. There would be no one to help her.

## Carolyn's Journal

Richard and Hilda could not come in time for the funeral, so the funeral was held without them. People from all over came to the funeral. The governor of the state and his cabinet were there. Some legislators were present. John Campbell came and of course Bob and Nancy were there. About everyone from Pine Grove was there. The furnace was banked that day so all the workers who wanted could come. The wife of the man who was killed with Joseph came to be with Carolyn at this time. When she introduced herself to Carolyn, Carolyn threw her arms around her neck and they both cried with their heads on each others shoulder.

The funeral was held in Pine Grove Church and there were so many people that some had to stand outside to hear the services. They were standing by the windows to hear and a large group huddled at the door! When the body was taken out to the place of internment in the cemetery, the crowd was so large that some could not hear what was said, but they reverently bowed their heads.

After the funeral, Carolyn was sobbing uncontrollably so Ellen and Nancy helped her to the Big House on The Hill and to her bed. As she lay on her bed the thoughts of her life with Joseph came rolling through her mind. No longer would she feel those strong arms of his give her a hug on an impulse! No longer would she hear his gentle voice sooth her when she was upset. No longer would she be able to see his beautiful smile! No longer would she be able to fuss at him for spoiling the children and getting them off their schedules!

She sobbed in her pillow when she heard a voice soothing and clear. "Don't cry my child! Your work I have set for you has begun. You will sleep now and when you awaken you will feel much better."

"Who are you? How do I know you are real and not a figment of my imagination?" There was no answer. I went to sleep and slept for several hours. When I woke up, I did feel better! Just as the voice said I would.

I got up, washed my face and brushed my hair. I went to the nursery and looked at my children. They made me feel happy. I could smile and laugh again. I went by Suzie's room and heard her crying. I knocked on the door and entered. She was lying on her bed sobbing much as I had been. I walked over and sat on the edge of the bed and told Suzie, "This was the will of God! I don't like it, but it is. Joseph wouldn't want us to cry and carry on like this."

"Mother, he was my adopted father and I loved him very much! I'm going to miss him so very much!"

"I know dear, but it is not given the dead should carry on in this life, but the living! We must buck up and somehow do that we thought we couldn't do before!"

Before more could be said, the door knocker sounded. I left Suzie and went to the door. It was Bob. He had come to console me.

"I just want you to know how sorry I am that this happened, but remember it has happened to me also. I know how you must feel! When Abigail died, I had nothing of her. You have ten and soon to be twelve children or parts of Joseph to remember him by and to cherish! Be thankful for what you have. It is God's will

## Carolyn's Journal

for you. He has something greater and better for you! Thank God for allowing you to share your life with Joseph as long as you have."

"This is what I wanted to tell you. This is God's will. He has bigger things for you. You will be happy again just like he has done for me."

"I expect you are right, Bob."

"Do you remember when you were sad about losing the Baron to Agatha? Shortly after that you found Joseph and you had greater happiness than you would have had with the Baron. God moved in my life and he will move in your life. Just give Him time!"

"Thank you, Bob. You are a great friend! As you say, you have suffered similarly and you know what you are talking about."

"Carolyn, I'm going to take care of all the debts you have incurred during this time. I'm going to pay them and you won't have to worry about them."

"I appreciate that, but I can take care of them."

"When Abigail was dying, your father came over and did my work and his. He never asked. He just did it. I could never repay him for it, but I can this way! Please don't refuse me this."

"I guess money will be a little scarce now that I don't have Joseph working. I would appreciate that very much."

"It will be my pleasure. I hope I have helped you some. I like to see you laughing and happy. I love to hear you sing when you are happy! It cheers me up along with all who hear you. At this time you just don't seem like the Carolyn I know!"

"You have helped me more than you know. Thank you!" I gave him a hug and a kiss on the cheek as he left.

I went back to the nursery and there was Suzie with red eyes playing with the children. Suzie was no blood relation, but she had come to feel like we were her family.

Father, mother and mother Herta came in a few days to be with me for a while. It was good having them. It seemed almost like old times. Mother Herta went into the nursery to look at the babies and asked, "Are all these yours?"

"Yes, they are Joseph's and mine." Anytime I thought of Joseph, tears came to my eyes. I just couldn't help it.

"Land sakes child! What are you trying to do? Repopulate the earth?" She laughed and it made me laugh! It felt good although it was a little forced.

Mother saw Suzie and the state she was in and demanded that Suzie play something on the harp so she might judge whether to take her on the next tour or not. Suzie dried her tears, washed her face and went to the harp. She tuned the harp and then played a tune for mother. At the conclusion of the tune mother said, "I will take you with me if your mother and father will let you and if Carolyn can let you go." Suzie's eyes lit up and a smile came on her face.

"I will let her go reluctantly. I have come to rely on her a lot, but I will let her go. This means a lot to her and it will be good for her to get away for a while."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I think my real mother and father will let me go. They wouldn't stand in the way of my becoming famous." Suzie went to see her mother and father to get their permission. Suzie really didn't have to get her real parents permission, but this involved them and made them feel like they were an important part of Suzie's life.

I went with mother to the nursery to see if father were there. I looked in and he wasn't there. Only mother Herta was there. I happened to look out on the lawn and there was father and the triplets! He was showing them something.

Mother and I went to see what he was doing. He was showing them a nest that had fallen from the tree. He took them back up on the porch and started telling them one of his famous stories.

Mother went to look at the flower beds. I went back into the house and got mother Herta out of the nursery by asking her questions.

I guess you know by now that Erin is an exact copy of you!"

"I know, mother Herta. The only difference is that she has sisters and brothers something I never had."

"She certainly does!

Mother had walked in and heard us talking.

"I'm going to have to go home and go on tour soon so we must leave soon."

"It seems like you just got here!"

"We did, but I want to prepare for the tour and I want to get Suzie ready. We will have to play some things together and some alone."

"Do you think Suzie might meet her prince charming over there?"

"She might. You never can tell.

"I think I will stay here with Carolyn for a while longer. Earl is supposed to come over to see about investing in one of these furnaces. When he goes back I will go with him, if it is all right with Carolyn."

"You know it is! The children and I would love to have you stay for a while longer. They are beginning to think of you as one of their grandmothers."

"I hope you don't change their minds. If Earl hadn't lost his senses, they would be my grandchildren!"

"Don't be hard on him. He just fit into God's plan. He couldn't help himself."

"That is nice of you to say that, but I'm still mad at him for doing that!"

Mother and father reluctantly packed to go. Suzie packed her things in with mother's things and was ready to leave. Father came to me and said, "Carolyn, I know you are going to have expenses and you have no income, so I am going to continue sending money until you don't need it. I'm sorry Joseph is gone. I liked him a lot and your mother liked him almost as much as you! Without him to keep you here, you could come home, you know!"

"My home is here now, father. I have work to do here and I have it started now. I'll be staying here, but maybe I can come and visit you and mother after these two babies are born. Then you could play with the children and do what you wanted with them while they are with you."

## Carolyn's Journal

"That would be great! The old place doesn't seem the same with you gone. " A tear came to father's eye as he said this.

"I have missed you too, father! I hope to see you more often now."

I took the three of them to Portsmouth to go home by way of the Erie Canal. I waved good bye to them until they were out of sight. Then I headed for home. This was the first time I had been without Suzie. I missed her already. She was like a daughter to me.

On the way home a man jumped out from behind some bushes alongside the road and pulled the horses to a stop. He looked at me and demanded, "I'll take you and your money!" This was happening all too frequently any more with the new settlements around. Young ladies were being forced and even killed!

"I don't have any money and I am with child!" I was hoping he would drop the bridle so I could get away from him.

"That doesn't make no difference to me. I'll still take you and your money." Just then a buck deer charged up the side of the buggy and knocked him down. The deer held him down with his antlers until I could go on down the road. The animals had saved me again!

On July 20 the twins decided they wanted to take up residence elsewhere. Mother Herta was my midwife with Big Eagle's wife assisting.

The twins were born in fine shape and healthy. One was a beautiful, bright eyed, red headed girl and the other a boy. All of my other children had hair of other colors, but this was my first red head. I called the boy Earl and the girl Colleen. This is what Joseph wanted them named. Herta was pleased that we had thought enough of Earl to name one of our sons after him.

When possible, I had to get a new governess to take Suzie's place. Mother Herta would soon leave and Minerva could not care for twelve children by herself. I found another girl who was in need of help and brought her into my home to be a live-in Governess. She was no Suzie, but she was help and loved the children.

Mother Herta was enjoying her stay. She played with the children and they loved her and called her grandmother. One day I heard a knock at the door and went to answer it. Who should be standing there as big as life but Earl. He had come for mother Herta. His business was concluded and he was getting ready to go home to England.

"Come in! I guess you have come to take mother Herta away from me!"

"I guess so. I'm sorry to hear of your loss. You do know that if there is anything I can do for you, all you have to do is ask!"

"I figured that. I was sorry to hear about Aggy and the baby. Her mother died giving birth to Aggy, so I guess it runs in the family."

"You have children?"

"Come with me and I will show you." We met Ruth Ann in the hallway.

"The oldest?" He asked.

"Not really. She is a live-in governess." I smiled.

"I'm sorry, you wouldn't be old enough to have one that old."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Right again." We went into the nursery and Mother Herta was in there playing with the children.

"Well I see that you made it." She walked over and gave Earl a hug and a kiss on the cheek. Then she looked at him and said, "If you hadn't lost your senses several years ago, all these children would be MY grandchildren!"

"I'm ready to go anytime you are mother." He looked at me and asked, "Are all of these children your children, Carolyn?"

"They are indeed. I have an even dozen. Your mother was the midwife for the last two. Let me introduce you to this tribe."

I called Erin over and introduced her to Earl. "Her name is Agatha Erin after Aggy."

I called each of the older children up and introduced them to Earl. Then I told him the names of the smaller children.

He looked at me after the introductions and said, "You have identical triplets which is unusual. You have identical twins. You have quadruplets. Yet you don't look a day older than when I first met you. This is to say nothing about a little girl that looks exactly like you!"

"Now don't get started with me! I'm in a period of mourning for my husband whom I loved very, very much. I don't believe I could have loved you like I did Joseph. It was God's will for things to go like they did."

"Do you suppose it was God's will to take both of our spouses so we might get together again?"

"Now I have no idea of God's will for me. As I said, I'm in mourning for my husband and I haven't tried to look too far ahead."

"If I have to wait for you forever, I will do it! I told you once before that I would wait for as long as it takes. I have always loved you and always will."

"You didn't show much love when you proposed to me and slept with Aggy!"

Mother Herta said, "I'll go pack so you two can talk." She wanted to leave the two of us alone.

"I think I need to explain what happened, so you will understand that better."

"No need to. You did it and that is that!"

"Will you listen to what I have to say?"

"All right I suppose I do owe you the opportunity to at least offer an excuse."

"This is no excuse. Before I start, I want to say that I was wrong. I don't know how I could have changed things, but I was wrong!"

"This is how it happened and you tell me if I could have done differently."

Earl proceeded to tell me what happened between Aggy and him. It was a completely different story than what I had been led to believe.

"I could have done as Joseph in the Bible, but I did not flee. I am therefore guilty of the crime. Now that is the truth so help me God! It only happened that once and that not by choice."

"That sounds like something Aggy would have done. As I told you before, however it happened is of no interest to me. God didn't want me to marry you

## Carolyn's Journal

and that was his way of stopping the marriage. I realize you had little choice in the matter and I forgive you for what you did just as I have forgiven Aggy for what she did. I won't forget it, but I have forgiven you."

"I'm glad to hear that."

"Those are the facts of the case."

"I have to get mother and head back to England yet tonight, so I best get started."

I kissed him on the cheek as he was about to go out the door. I kissed and hugged mother Herta as she left and I invited her back anytime.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Twelve A TRUE CINDERELLA

In September I tried to get Erin in school, but they wouldn't take her. I was wrong on two counts. I supposed they took children at five and I was wrong about when her birthday had to be. They had to be six by January 1. Erin would not be six until March. I would have to keep her home another year.

I started teaching Erin to sing some hymns and songs that I sang in church. When she had some of them learned, I let her sing with me on Sundays. The people really enjoyed hearing both of us sing.

The pastor had a special platform made that Erin could stand on to bring her almost to my level so we could use the same book as we sang. She really enjoyed that! She would look at me Sunday mornings and ask if she could sing too. I always told her yes.

The end of the harvest festival was coming up soon. Being in mourning, it would be improper for me to dance or do anything that would suggest to others that I was enjoying Joseph's death. I had always enjoyed dancing the square dances with Joseph each year. This year I did not have Joseph, so I wouldn't dance.

The ladies cut pieces of rags into shapes they wanted for a quilt block. They gave these pieces to the girls in the community to sew together to make a block. These blocks were judged for neatness, size of stitches and distance from the edge of the material. Prizes were awarded for the best job. These blocks were then gathered and during the year the ladies made them into a quilt. This quilt was then hung for all to see. Tickets were sold to raffle the quilt off. The winning number got the quilt. Occasionally a needy person would win the quilt, but sometimes Bob or I would win it. We would always give it to a needy family. Some of the quilts were really beautiful. I hated to give them up, but I knew I might be considered selfish by some, so I gave them away.

It was coming the time of the year for new shoes for my older boys and girls. When the cobbler came each year, he was always smiling and singing. Each year he usually had a pair of shoes to make. Sometimes more because of triplets, twins and quadruplets.

I had to have the leather and then all I had to do was pay him for his work. I always had to buy the leather from someone who had some. I had more expensive shoes than most everyone else because of this.

One year a friend of John Campbell had killed a deer and had tanned the hide. He gave John the hide and John did not need it, so he gave the hide to me for the children's shoes. That proved to be the best leather for shoes. It was soft and pliable. The only problem was that the leather wore out quicker because it was so soft. I noticed this and wouldn't let the children wear those shoes except for church. They had to wear their old shoes for everyday or go barefoot. Coming up on winter, they did not want to go barefoot outdoors so they wore their old shoes.

## Carolyn's Journal

Another person that came through occasionally was the peddler. He peddled everything from pots and pans to combs and brushes.

I got a little upset with some peddlers because they sold soap for women that would peel the hide off a dead hog! He would tell the women how wonderful it was and they would buy it thinking they were getting something great. The first time they used it, it set them on fire! Some got bad burns from it.

Bob tried to keep the peddlers out of our furnace area because he didn't want them competing with the company store. The women liked for the peddler to come because it gave them a link to the outside world. Most of the ladies in Pine Grove didn't get a newspaper and some of them couldn't read it had they gotten one. They just hadn't learned to read. I was hoping that maybe some of them would come to me and ask for help in learning to read. So far no one has except the Indians.

The night of the festival came and I got my black dress on, gathered up the older children and went to the festival. The square dance began and I sat with the children on the side just watching it. I had never watched it before, so I hadn't seen how nice the dance looked.

A few of the men who did not know what the black dress meant came up and asked me for a dance. I had to tell them I was in mourning and couldn't.

After the dance and festival was over, I gathered my little ones up and headed for home. When I got part way home, I told the children, "I love you children! I love every one of you and I'm happy I had you so I could love you!"

The children gathered around my legs and hugged my legs. I squatted down so they could hug my neck. They all gave me a big hug around the neck in one big group. They all said together, "We love you too, mother! We are happy you are our mother instead of someone who might not love us!"

We all walked holding each others hands side by side and skipped the rest of the way home.

When we neared the house, I noticed a light in the house. I asked the children, "Did one of you light a candle before we left and forget to put it out?" They all assured me that they hadn't. I apparently had intruders of some sort in my house. I went into the parlor and looked around. I didn't see anything out of the way there, so I went into the living room and there sat the intruders! Mother and Suzie had come back and were waiting for us to return. I caught those two culprits in a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. Mother and Suzie gave each child a hug and a kiss. Suzie seemed overjoyed about something and it wasn't just getting back to her little brothers and sisters!

"I see I'm going to have to lock my door when I leave after this!" I laughed. "How did things go on your tour and how was Suzie accepted?" "The tour was a great success! The people asked us to play more and applauded longer this time. Suzie was well liked and she has some exciting news to tell you!"

"Yes, and if I don't get to tell it soon I will surely pop!"

"Go ahead! We are listening."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Grandmother and I were playing for the king of England. Can you imagine a simple little girl from the hills in Ohio playing for the king of England? We were in the palace playing and at intermission time we were talking to the various members of the royal family. A handsome young man came up to me and wanted to know if he could court me!"

I said, "Why should I? I don't know you from Adam's house cat!"

He pointed to a lady and said, "That is my mother!"

I questioned him further, "I thought royalty had to marry royalty!"

"He looked at me and said, 'I'm so far down the line that I can marry anyone I choose and right now I choose you!'"

Suzie was really excited. This was her chance to be someone besides a hill billy from southern Ohio!

"I'm really happy for you, Suzie! I told you that your prince charming would show up someday!"

"You certainly did. I told him that if he were going to court me, he must come to America and do it in my parlor. I hope you don't mind me telling him to come here."

"Of course you can court here! Aren't you my daughter?"

"Yes, and you are my wonderful mother." Suzie gave me a big hug around the waist.

I went to see that all my children were tucked in bed proper. I did this each evening and sometimes I would tell them a story or I would sing for them an old Irish lullaby. I want my children to always be happy when they go to sleep at night and assure them that I love them. I had to feed Earl and Colleen each night yet. At the 2:00 a.m. feeding I got up to feed them and there in the nursery was both Ruth Ann and Suzie. I had forgotten to tell Suzie that she didn't need to get up for that.

"Suzie, what are your plans for now? Do you plan to stay around for a while or are you going with mother on another tour soon?"

"I intend to be here for a while to see if Charles will show up. If he does not come then I will be here until grandmother goes on another tour."

"Ruth Ann has been helping me since you left. I don't need both of you getting up at two to help me with the babies. So if it is all right with you both, I'll let Suzie help with the 2:00 a.m. feeding and Ruth Ann can do all the other feedings when she is not in school. This will give Ruth Ann more sleep and maybe she won't sleep so much in class."

Ruth Ann was startled for a moment and then asked, "How did you know I was sleeping in class?"

"I was told that you were and they wanted to know if I could do anything to help the problem."

"If I don't have to get up at 2:00 a.m., then I probably can stay awake during History class!"

I got two problems solved. Suzie felt like she was back in harness and Ruth Ann felt some of her load lifted.

## Carolyn's Journal

It was coming up on Thanksgiving time followed by Christmas. By the middle of November Suzie's Charles arrived with Earl to court Suzie as promised. Earl had come to see if I had changed my mind or decided what I was going to do.

"Do you have any plans yet? Have you decided what you are going to do?" Earl wanted to know.

"I'm still in mourning and have made no plans for the future yet. I will let you know if there is any change and when there is. You didn't have to come all the way over here for that! You could have written a letter to find that out!"

Suzie was really in love with Charles and the best I could see Charles was crazy about her. All Suzie could talk about was getting married to Charles and sharing her life with him and having children of her own.

I looked for Charles to propose to Suzie during Christmas. He fooled me and asked Suzie to marry him during Thanksgiving. Suzie accepted, but informed him that he would have to ask her dad for her hand. The following day Suzie and Charles went hand in hand to Suzie's parent's cabin to ask her dad for Suzie. Apparently everything went well for Suzie was bubbling all over saying that she was so happy she could pop.

"Isn't that a beautiful ring mother?" She held her finger up for me to look. "I think it is the most beautiful ring I have ever seen!"

"I thought mine was beautiful too. Every lady thinks her engagement ring is the most beautiful. Have you two set a date for the wedding yet?"

"I want to take Suzie to my place in England for Christmas so she can meet my people. After Christmas my mother, Suzie and I will sit down and choose a date."

"If you plan to go to England during Christmas, Suzie, you must have a chaperone and I cannot go then. Perhaps your mother can go with you."

"Not my real mother! I'll have to take grandmother or I can't go. My mother would ruin everything!"

"Aren't you being a little hard on your mother? She might do well."

"My mother doesn't know how to act and her manners aren't good enough around royalty!"

"Then why don't you see if your grandmother will go with you?"

"I hope she can." Suzie hurried off looking for mother. Charles stayed with me and asked what the story was with Suzie having two mothers.

I explained that to Charles and he understood.

"She certainly thinks of you as being her mother. She is always talking about you and the children when we are alone."

"You are getting a very intelligent young lady. She is a real gem! Don't ever do anything to hurt her in any way because she is crazy about you! She has had many disappointments in her young life. Don't let this be another one."

"I would never knowingly hurt her. I love her very much also."

Suzie came back all excited. "Grandmother said she could chaperone us during Christmas if she were allowed to play the harp at our wedding. I'm so happy I could pop!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"We should see if that is agreeable with my mother. Mother adores hearing your grandmother play. She will probably think this is an honor to have her play at our wedding!"

I looked at Suzie. She was about to say her favorite expression again and I was about to correct her when I realized that this was a piece of the hills that had been ingrained into her. It did no harm and she was happy.

We all celebrated Thanksgiving and Suzie, mother, Charles and Earl all packed for their trip. Before they all left, they went by the nursery and kissed all of the children good bye. Earl had brought his yacht this time so I took them all to Union Landing. Erin had come with me. We stood on the wharf and waved bye as they disappeared down river.

When they were out of sight, Erin looked at me and asked, "Suzie and grandmother will be back won't they?"

I surely hope they will. I'd like to see Suzie when she comes back this time. I expect she will say, "I'm so happy I could pop!"

Erin looked at me and we both laughed.

When we got back to the house, I told Minerva and Ruth Ann to make certain that when the candlestick maker came to have plenty of tallow on hand for candles. It looked like we were going to need them.

I taught the triplets to sing the songs Erin and I sang. Hilda and Herta were too small yet, but it wouldn't be long before they could join us. When the triplets were ready, I had them join Erin and me one Sunday morning. The people at church really enjoyed hearing the five of us.

Somehow word got back to Bob about the five of us singing, so he asked me to come to his church in Hanging Rock some Sunday and sing for them. I agreed to do that for him.

Bob was a very religious man and had helped get the church in Hanging Rock started. I suspect that he puts a lot of money into that church! We sang in the church in Hanging Rock the next Sunday. The people really did enjoy hearing us sing. They asked us to sing again the next Sunday. I had to refuse because I did have more children and I needed to be with them.

Bob said, "If you will come back some Sunday and bring all of your family, We will have a dinner on the grounds in your honor!"

"That would be nice, but I need to work it into my schedule. Earl and Colleen are still too small to travel. I'll have to let you know when. You people here are very nice."

This is the first year I went to the Indian Council meetings with George. From what I can see, this looks like the work the voice said I would do for Him.

I was lying in bed sound asleep one night when I heard a frenzied loud knock on the door. Being a widow and alone I hesitated to answer, but then I thought that perhaps someone was in need. As I lit a candle the knocking resumed. I went to the door and asked through the door who it was. A familiar voice on the other side remarked, "You come. We go meet council. It take long time. Travel night. Protect Princess."

## Carolyn's Journal

I didn't get all of Big Eagle's message because he always spoke with a sign language of his own when he spoke and I was unable to see this through a closed door. I opened the door and looked at him. He had his wife with him, two young maidens and several braves.

"Would you please tell me what this is all about? I can't go anywhere at this time as I have two babies to care for and a family to tend."

"You come! Squah care family. Maidens carry babies. Must go! Very important!"

He certainly had taken care of all my excuses well. "You will have to give me time to get dressed and ready."

He looked at me very sternly, "Must hurry. Travel many nights. Council very important! Prove you Princess. Must wear Indian Maiden dress." With that he pulled out a leather tunic and skirt for me to wear.

I hurriedly put the tunic and skirt on. I came back to where he was standing. "Big Eagle I feel naked in this thing! The skirt only comes to my knees and the tunic is cut too low for me. Do I have to wear it?"

Big Eagle looked at me, "Indian business, Indian clothes!"

I went to the nursery and picked up Earl and Colleen and handed them to the Indian maidens who followed me to the nursery. They placed the babies in a leather sack to be carried on their backs. They were going to be carried like an indian papoose! When I returned to the living room, Big Eagle took me by the hand and rushed me outside. His wife had on a white man's dress and spoke good English as she had been brought up in a mission.

Big Eagle had rushed me so that I had forgotten my bonnet. "I have to get my bonnet or I will sunburn." I started to go back when Big Eagle grabbed me by the arm again.

"No need. Ride with cover."

I looked and they had a chair fastened to two poles that four braves carried on their shoulders. Above the chair and over the top was a piece of leather that would protect me from the sun. I thought this thing quite ingenious. I could see that there was no way I was going to get out of making this trip!

We traveled the rest of that night and on into the morning a ways before we stopped. The maidens rode on horses and the two babies slept without a whimper. When we stopped, I fed the babies without too much privacy. I was having to live as the Indians do and I wasn't too sure I liked that idea!

Our little camp was made in a section of dense forest so we would not be seen easily. We slept most of the day and when night came we continued our journey. I noticed an Indian who was not part of our group following us. I mentioned this to Big Eagle and they all stopped and went into a big discussion of some kind. While they were discussing two braves sneaked out and caught the one that had been spying on us. They brought him back to Big Eagle. They all had a big discussion again and forced the spy to go with us when we resumed our journey. Others of the party rode horses, but the spy walked.

## Carolyn's Journal

We traveled for a week before we were close to our destination. Our destination was a large rise in the ground. The sides rose almost straight up out of the plain. There were a few trees and bushes growing on the sides and it went straight up for about 150 to 200 feet. It was about a mile across and circular in shape. I had never seen such a thing in all my life!

Big Eagle came to me, "Me sorry. You walk now." With that the braves put the chair down and I got off. It was nice riding, but it was also nice to have my feet on the ground once more.

"Princess follow." I followed him and we began our ascent of this prominence. It was steep and in places my foot would slip as the ground gave way under my feet. Big Eagle would always grab me and pull me up again. I was comforted by him catching me for a fall would mean certain death!

We climbed to the top and the top was flat with some trees and then a clear place in front of a large rock that looked like it had a throne on it. Big Eagle and company set up camp and I fed the babies as the two maidens prepared a meal for us. The meal was good and well seasoned. I had learned a long time ago not to get too curious about what the Indians had cooked.

By the time we had gotten to the top of the prominence it was already turning to day. Some other Indians were already there when we arrived and more came as we ate. I was tired from not sleeping, but I was not going to get any rest that day! The Indians began their council meeting shortly after we had eaten.

The chiefs of all the groups present sat in a horseshoe pattern in front of the huge stone. Big Eagle stood and spoke to the group. When he was finished another Indian rose and spoke.

Unbeknownst to me one brave came up behind me, grabbed me by the hair and pulled me up next to him with my head tilted back and a knife to my throat! About that time a small pack of wolves ran out of the woods and attacked him to where he let me go. The wolves killed him. After he had let me go and they had killed him the wolves disappeared into the woods.

All of the chiefs came over to me and dusted me off and one of the maidens let me have a comb of sorts to straighten my hair. The chiefs then led me to the throne and had me sit on it. With the short skirt I had on, I almost froze sitting on that cold rock.

All of the chiefs bowed down to me after they had gotten me seated. I wasn't certain if I was to bless them or what. I waited a few minutes and they did not rise, so I blessed them. They then rose and took their previous positions.

Big Eagle got up and said something in his language and all of the other chiefs seemed to agree. In a moment Big Eagle rose and came toward me. He took hold of the rock where a portion of it stuck out from the throne and pulled. The throne chair moved forward revealing a gold box that contained some jewelry. There was a crown that he took out and placed on my head. There were some bracelets for my arms. There was one beautiful ring that fit my finger exactly! There was a necklace of rare gems that was placed over my head and around my neck. I felt like a princess for sure with these things on.

## Carolyn's Journal

In a moment or two there was a rush of air that blew past me and as it did I heard the voice I had heard after Joseph's death. The wind and voice stayed with me and told me what I would have to do and tell these Indians. When this was done the wind ceased and I told the chiefs what I was instructed to tell them.

Some of them agreed with what had been told them and some refused.

Those who refused left the meeting and headed for home, I assume. Those who agreed, stayed on and discussed how they were going to do what they had been instructed. I told them the way the voice had told me to tell them to follow these instructions.

The third day after this meeting began, Big Eagle had me sit on the throne again and he placed all of the jewelry back in the box under the throne and then pushed the throne over the box. I was going to get off the throne to make it lighter for him to push, but he told me that I had to be on the throne for him to be able to push it back. He told me that it had to be me or the throne would not move. To prove his point he had a maiden sit on the throne and he could not budge it. He then had me sit on it and he could move the throne easily. That proved to me and all present that only the princess could make the throne movable. How that was I have no idea!

The next evening we began our decent off the prominence and arrived on solid ground again. I was certainly grateful to get to be off of that prominence!

In a little over a week we were back home in Pine Grove and I felt like kissing the ground. We arrived during the night and so all of the children were asleep. I could hardly wait to get those leather clothes off and get my own on. I certainly did not want my children to see me like that!

The next morning the children came running out of their rooms to see if I were home. When they found me home they grabbed me around the legs and gave me a hug. I bent down and they gave me a group hug. I was happy to see them also.

The maidens had put the babies in their beds and left as did all the rest of the Indians.

It had been a long journey and now I knew for certain that I was the princess that they had waited for and what my job with them was going to be! Why me I will never know!

That spring saw bad times with sicknesses. We had the usual mumps, measles and chicken pox. We also had diphtheria, scarlet fever and whooping cough. Some children died and some were left with their bodies damaged by the sickness. I always hate to hear of anyone dying, but it really gets to me when I hear of a child dying. It makes me wonder how I would feel if it were one of mine. I have lost Joseph and I don't think I could stand to lose one of my children.

Bob and Nancy lost two of their children this spring to these sicknesses. Nancy nearly lost her mind. She lost one boy, John, and this was bad enough, but then she lost another boy soon after that to the same sickness. I did what I could to console her, but she insisted that I had a lot on me from the loss of Joseph and didn't need to take on more.

## Carolyn's Journal

I said to her, "Nancy, you were there for me when I needed you, so it is no more than fair that I be with you to help if I am needed."

"That is so, but I don't want you taking that dreadful sickness home to your children and maybe losing one of yours!"

"I'll go home and if you need me, just let me know. I really don't want to expose myself or my children to this unnecessarily."

Bob and Nancy buried their little ones in the company cemetery beside the church. It really made me feel bad because the triplets had played with John a lot.

Mother and Suzie returned in April. They had, had a long stay in England. Suzie was all bubbly. They had set the date of the wedding for July. Why then, I will never know. I guess the in-laws worked that one out.

In March Ellen had her first child and was very happy and proud. It was a beautiful boy. She brought him to see me as soon as she could travel. She also took him to see his grandparents. Her husband was so happy that he was giving everyone cigars! When Suzie got back from England, she went to visit Ellen and her baby. She and Ellen had been 'the twins' growing up and they were still very close.

Suzie asked me to come to her wedding. It was going to be in England. I told her, "You don't want me. I cry at weddings!"

Suzie laughed and said, "So do a lot of mothers! You can come. You are just making excuses now."

"Who will take care of the children? I can't take all of them."

"Charles' mother is sending for you and is going to provide you with a couple of governesses to take care of the children."

"I'm not in any wedding yet."

"Don't be silly mother! Since father is gone, you must come so you can give me away."

"That is not my job at a wedding! That is a job for your real father. He will do it won't he?"

"He said he wouldn't travel to England for any amount of money or wedding! It is just too much trouble for him. That only leaves you and I would hate to have you let me down at my wedding!"

"I guess then I'll have to make plans to go. You tell your future mother-in-law that I will come, but I will bring my own governesses for the children. The children are used to the ones they have and will do better."

"I knew you wouldn't let me down, mother. I'm so happy I could --," she looked at me and said, "burst." We all laughed. It felt good to laugh again! It had been a long spring.

It came up on the first of June and we were going to have to leave if we were to get to the wedding on time. Everyone was busy. Minerva and Ruth Ann checked to be certain they had everything they would need, both for themselves and for the children.

I packed the engagement ring and the fancy ball gown Earl had given me years ago. I also packed the necklace and tiara mother Herta had given me. I

## Carolyn's Journal

absolutely have no idea why I packed those things, but I did. For some reason I felt compelled to take them.

Mother got her things together and we all double checked to be certain that we had everything we might need. I had asked Bob and Nancy if they would watch the house for us while we were gone. They agreed readily. Bob said he would do anything he could to help Suzie after she had been so badly treated by her mother. It would also help Nancy get her mind off things.

Charles had ordered two surreys to go to Portsmouth. He had routed the whole trip for us and made all the arrangements. All we had to do was show up. When we arrived in Portsmouth, we boarded a canal barge for Cleveland. From there we would travel on Lake Erie to Buffalo where we would go back on the Erie Canal to Albany. From Albany to Boston by coach and then the royal yacht to England.

This route should prove to be most interesting and beautiful. We would be going places I had read about in geography class when I was in Common School! Charles had routed us this way because it would give me more privacy when it came time for the twins to eat. He seemed very thoughtful. It would certainly be educational for the older children. They had never been farther away from home than Hanging Rock!

We arrived in Portsmouth at the dock for the canal barge. The male attendants were very helpful and careful to make certain the ladies' dress tails didn't catch on something and cause them to trip and fall.

The children and governesses were all taking in all the sights! There wasn't much that missed the eyes of the children!

After we passed Columbus a ways, Ruth Ann came to me and said, "Mother! If it's as far out that away as it is back that away, this worlds a big one!" Ruth Ann had never been out of Pine Grove. She was born in a worker's cabin and her family was so poor that they never went anywhere.

I laughed at her expression and excitement and I said, "Yes Ruth Ann, this world is a big one!"

Ruth Ann went back with the children and mother leaned over and whispered, "If she thinks the world is big from that, wait until we get all the way to England!" We both laughed at Ruth Ann's innocence about the size of the world.

Of course Earl and Colleen were not big enough to notice much and had to be carried or held by one of the adults.

Suzie said, "I can't wait to be married and have a child of my own. I think that would be wonderful knowing that you and your husband have brought a new life into the world!"

"If I don't miss my guess, you will probably know at this time next year" mother commented.

"I hope you are right, grandmother. That will make you a great-grandmother!"

"You just spoiled the thought! That makes me sound like an antique!"

## Carolyn's Journal

We were several days on the canals and Lake Erie to where we were all tired by the time we reached mother and father's house. My birth place! This was the first time I had been back home since I left with Joseph years ago.

Father was pleased to have a chance to be with his grandchildren and wanted to play with them. I was tired, but I felt I needed to keep an eye on the children. Everyone else had gone to sleep in the chairs they were sitting on. The last I remember was father saying something about taking the children outside for a while.

When I woke up, father had all ten children with him outdoors. He was leading them like a mother duck! They were all following him around and seemingly doing as he said.

Mother had gotten up and I told her to look out the back window. She did and said, "Well I never! That is a sight to behold! I never thought he could do that!"

"I think that is great! Now we know what he can do with the children. He is really great with them, mother!"

"While he is keeping the children, suppose we start dinner."

"That is a good idea. Whatever happened to Minnie?"

"She left us for another family shortly after you left. She claimed they would pay more. We offered to increase her pay, but she went anyway. I think the new family had children and she missed that!"

"Well, I miss seeing her. She was a good friend to me. She taught me a lot of things that I have needed."

After dinner that evening everyone was ready for a night's rest. Even the children were ready for bed. Father had tired them out walking around outside.

We all took baths for the first time in a while and went to bed.

The next morning we were all up early and got ready to board the royal yacht for England. I had to check and make sure I had twelve passports for the little ones and one for myself. When we started through customs, the agent looked at me and the twelve children and asked, "They all yours?"

"Yes sir. "I said proudly.

"You hand me the passport of each child as they go through the gate. That way I know I have each one.

I had the children lined up by age and had them go through the gate one at a time as I handed the agent the passports. I started with Erin and ended with Colleen and then myself.

Mother went through customs next, then Ruth Ann and finally Minerva. Suzie was the last one through. "

Suzie came through the gate and aboard the yacht. She was laughing so hard she had a time walking!

When she got up to me, She couldn't tell me what was so funny for a few minutes. When she told me, we both had a good laugh. For some reason I was feeling freer and able to laugh more.

## Carolyn's Journal

In a few days we were in the English channel headed for Southampton. This yacht was a steamboat. It had no sails to set and kept traveling at a certain speed. Sailboats would go fast until they lost the wind. By going at a steady speed, we were able to make better time.

The crew was all men in the royal navy. If anyone knew how to handle this yacht it certainly was them! The children had seen sights that would take them a long time to tell their friends back in Ohio.

Charles had sent two royal carriages for us at the dock. We went through customs without a problem, but the agent looked and laughed when he saw all my children following me like little ducks.

We traveled to London and then on out to Charles' home. The road looked familiar to me and when we came to a turn off I recognized, I knew then that Charles and Earl were neighbors!

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Thirteen AN OLD FLAME REKINDLED

When we arrived at Charles' home, we pulled up to the porch and there were people on the porch awaiting our arrival. Charles introduced us to all of the people first and then introduced us to his mother. He had me to introduce the children to his mother because he couldn't tell some of them apart.

The girls curtsied and the boys bowed as they were introduced to his mother. Charles' mother was most impressed by the children's manners. I was quite proud of my brood! They could really show good manners when it counted.

"I don't mean to cast aspersions on your hospitality, but you will no doubt be having many guests staying over at your place and my children will be taking up rooms that you could use. I think it best for me to take my group over to Earl's place if he will have us." I suggested to Charles' mother.

"We will have lots of room for everyone. I will be happy to have the children around! They won't be underfoot!"

"I think it best for us to bed over at Earl's. If you want the children over here during the day, they may come and spend the day with you."

"You can't stay at Earl's without a proper chaperone (old Eng. spelling)!" Reminded mother.

"I believe Herta is over there and I'm sure she would welcome the chance to chaperone you two!" said Charles.

"Thank you, Charles! I'll go see if we can stay there."

I took one of the buggies sitting in the drive and drove on over to Earl's place. I knocked on the door and Jeeves answered the door. When he saw me, he gave me a big hug and kissed my cheek. I saw a tear in his eye.

"Miss Carolyn! I never thought I would see you again! You are just as beautiful as you were the last time I saw you!"

"Thank you Jeeves! You keep that up and I may just ask you to marry me!" I hugged him and kissed his cheek.

Jeeves looked at me and smiled a bigger smile than I have ever seen him smile. I asked, "Is Earl here?"

"Yes indeed! He is in the drawing room as usual."

"If you don't mind, I will go there by myself. I want to surprise him!"

"I'm sure he will be surprised. At this moment he is not thinking of seeing you, I'm certain!"

I went into the drawing room, walked up behind Earl quietly and asked, "You got a problem you need help on?"

"That could only be one person." He got up, stepped out from his chair, turned around and put his big arms around me and kissed me on the cheek. "I didn't expect to see you here. When did you get in? Where are the children?"

"We just arrived and the children are next door at Charles' home. That is why I have come over here. I thought it best that the children and I stay with you,

## Carolyn's Journal

if you would put us up. Mother Herta would have to chaperone the two of us if she is here."

"You know that I would be most happy to have you and the children stay here. Mother is in the living room and not very well, I'm afraid. She has something that is killing her and there is nothing that even the doctors can do. Perhaps having the children will cheer her up and make her feel better anyway. I know that she will jump at the chance to chaperone you and me."

"I'm sorry to hear she is not well. I'll go see her. She may get to feeling worse if the children are here!" I went into the living room and mother Herta was sitting in an easy chair and didn't look very well. She was pale and drawn. She had lost a lot of weight. When she saw me, she rose slowly from her chair and held her arms out for a hug.

"Carolyn! When did you get in? Where are the children? Are you going to stay here for a few days?"

"Let me give you that hug and a kiss." I walked over to mother Herta and gave her a big hug and a kiss on the cheek.

"We just got in over at Charles' place. I left the children there until I could find out if you folks could or would put us up and if you would chaperone Earl and me."

"Certainly, you and the children may stay here and I will be happy to chaperone you two! I'm still praying that you two will get together. I'm looking forward to really being a grandmother to a certain group of twelve children!"

"You don't think they will be too much for you?"

"Never!"

Earl went with me back to Charles' house and I had to round up twelve children and two governesses. When I got them all rounded up, I put them and their belongings on two coaches and said good bye to Charles' mother and the others who were there. We went back to Earl's mansion and took the children upstairs to get the sleeping arrangements made.

The children would sleep two to a bed. They were all happy except Erin. She wanted a bed to herself. "Mother, I am not a twin or a triplet or a quadruplet! I am one lone child and the oldest. I feel I should have some rights!" She objected with her hands on her hips.

Earl heard her and said, "I seem to remember someone else with that fiery attitude!"

"Do you have another room to where she can have a room and bed to herself?"

"Certainly she can have a room to herself."

"Oh thank you!" Erin hugged Earl's leg, but was too short to hug him proper so she motioned for him to bend down. He bent down and she hugged his neck and kissed him on the cheek.

"I am lucky today! I have been hugged and kissed by two beautiful ladies!"

Erin blushed and said, "I think you are really nice!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I'm glad you think so, your mother has some reservations in that department."

"You children be nice and mind Minerva and Ruth Ann. I want to go down and talk to mother Herta and then I have to talk with Earl. When I am through talking with mother Herta and if she prefers, you may come down and visit her."

"We are happy that we can visit grandmother," said Erin. I went down to the living room to talk with mother Herta. Earl went down with me. I was holding his hand as we went down. I didn't realize it. It just seemed natural to hold his hand. Earl went on to the drawing room while I talked to Mother Herta.

"Mother Herta, what is the prognosis? Couldn't you have a doctor that knows this problem do something for you?"

"The prognosis is bad. I have a year or less to live. There are no doctors who know a cure."

"I hate to hear that, mother Herta. Maybe the children will cheer you up anyway."

I went to the stairs and shouted to the children that they could come down now and visit with mother Herta. They must have been at the top of the stairs waiting because they nearly knocked me down before I could get out of the way.

"You children be good now! Mother Herta is sick and doesn't need you to worry her!"

I went into the drawing room to talk with Earl.

"I haven't been able to get my mind on my work ever since I found out that Joseph died! I have been praying that God would get you and me together some way."

"Didn't I tell you I was in mourning and had made no plans for the future?"

"You did, but now your mourning is over! Now you can look to the future and make plans!"

"That is true and if you notice, I am free of that old black dress! I was getting tired of wearing it. It made me feel morbid. What would you like to talk about?"

He sat in his chair and I sat in a chair on the other side of his desk. "Do you still have feelings for me? Are we going to be able to pick up where we left off? I would love for you to agree to marry me again. This time I don't have another woman in the house that is in love with me and can cause us problems!"

"If there were another woman in the house, would she be able to cause us problems?"

"I've learned my lesson! I will be true to you if you agree to marry me."

"Well, I haven't agreed yet."

"That sounds like a possibility!"

"It may, but I loved Joseph so much that I can't think about someone else taking his place!"

"Let me tell you something. You are hanging onto the past. I never knew you to do that. You have always said that what happened to you was God's will

## Carolyn's Journal

and went on. Now you are holding onto the past even though you say it was God's will. You apparently don't mean what you say!"

"What makes you say that? I do mean what I say."

"If that is the case, then why do you still cherish him? It is all right to hold to a memory, but if you cherish that memory, you haven't let go!"

"What can I do to prove that I do mean it?"

"For one thing you can take your wedding and engagement bands off! They are a tie to your past. You can keep them, but not on your finger!"

"Now that is a big order! I don't know about that!"

"You see! You are hanging onto the past. Do you think any man is going to court you, much less marry you, when he sees those rings on your finger?"

"You are right! I'll take them off and put them away. They are a symbol of the past." I took the rings off reluctantly and put them in my pocket. "Now does that make you feel better?"

"It wasn't for me. It was for you. Do YOU feel better?"

"I believe I do feel better than I did. Perhaps freer than I have."

"Now can you and I go to courting, or do you object to that?"

"I guess I don't object. I'm still not certain of what God would have me do. Not every man is going to take on a widow and twelve children!"

"I would in a minute if you would say you want me to!"

"You are just saying that."

"No, I'm not! I still love you and everything about you. Even your twelve children."

"I have a work to do in Ohio. Those people need me. I can't pull up stakes and leave."

"I could always move my headquarters there."

"You could?"

"Oh yes. In fact I may have to move to someplace else. Things are very unstable here as well as in Prussia. If I moved my operations to Ohio I would have a stable situation."

"Would you please excuse me? I need to check on the children and I will be right back."

I went up to my room. I took Earl's engagement ring out of the trunk and put Joseph's rings in the trunk and closed the lid. I slipped Earl's ring into my pocket. I said, "Joseph, I don't mean to forget you, but I have a life to live and I have to move ahead." Then I bowed my head and prayed, "Lord, I want to do your will. What would you have me do?"

A feeling of great relief fell over me and I knew what God's will was for me! Now I had no doubt or wonder about what God would have me do! I went to check on the children. Mother Herta was having a great time watching and playing with the children. I think she even looked better! I went back to Earl. He was waiting for my return. I reached into my pocket and handed him the ring and said, "I'm giving this back to you. You can do what you want with it."

## Carolyn's Journal

He took the ring and asked me, "I have always loved you. I am going to ask you again, will you marry me?"

I looked at him and said, "I will under two conditions. My children must agree and you must move with me back to Ohio." "We should see what they say, but you already know I will move my place of operations to Ohio."

"Let's go to the living room and see what the children and mother Herta have to say."

We went to the living room and I called the older children to me. I asked them, "If I were to marry again and get you another father, would you all like that?"

"It all depends on whom you plan to marry" Erin responded.

"Suppose it was Earl here. Would you want him to be your new father?"

"Would we have grandmother for a real grandmother?" asked Erin.

"If I married Earl you would have mother Herta for a real grandmother."

"I love her! Are you and Earl planning to get married?"

"If you all approve, we may."

"I'm for that!" Erin shouted.

"I want all of you to have your say, not just Erin." I went down the list and asked each of them what they thought. Each agreed that they were for Earl and me getting married.

"How about you mother Herta, what do you want us to do?"

"You know better than to ask me, Carolyn. I've been waiting for this for years and began to think I would never see this day. You two make me so happy!" She began to cry.

The next morning was the rehearsal for Suzie and Charles' wedding. Everything went off without a hitch. Erin was a miniature bridesmaid, Herta and Hilda were the flower girls, Robert was the ring bearer and Richard and Joseph were the train bearers. I gave Suzie away. There was only one person missing that I could see and that was the best man. When I asked about the best man, Charles assured me there would be a best man at the wedding.

The next day we all got fixed up for the wedding. We fixed our hair. Mother worked on Suzie's hair and fixed it as she had after Suzie recovered from the beating. We put on our wedding attire. The bridesmaids all had hoop skirts of pale pink satin. To my surprise, Earl was the best man! He hadn't told me or even hinted that he was going to be in the wedding. I should have surmised because he and Charles were best friends.

Everything went well at the wedding. Suzie was so happy I was afraid she might really pop! She looked at Charles during the ceremony like he was some kind of god!

At the reception she was all bubbly. I was afraid she might have gotten into someone's liquor, but if she had it wasn't on her breath. All in all the wedding was very nice and I was happy for Suzie, although it meant I would not have her services anymore.

## Carolyn's Journal

I had to look on her with pride. Here was a young lady from the hills of Virginia and Ohio who had a poor start in life and was now married to royalty! She had come a long, long way! She was surely a true Cinderella! If I could just have that success with my own, I could be grateful to God for those small things in life!

Suzie nor I had realized that the papers would pick up on the wedding. Once it was in all of the papers in England, it would be picked up by papers in other countries including America. This was when Ellen and others back in Pine Grove began to feel proud and perhaps a little jealous of Suzie. Ellen saved the papers so she could show Suzie if she ever got to see her again.

This went through the girls of Pine Grove to where they all wanted to take my course in hopes they too might marry a prince or someone of royalty. They all began to think of me as a true fairy Godmother. I had not thought about this in that light and it became a problem for me when I returned to America and started my classes again.

After we packed our things and got ready to leave for home, I told mother and the others that Earl and I were engaged to be married. Mother looked at me and asked, "Are you quite certain of what you are about to do?"

"Yes, I am. Earl has told me what happened and I am satisfied that he is being truthful. I feel certain that this is God's Will."

"That being the case I suggest that we set a date with you for your marriage."

Mother Herta suggested, "This is July, why don't we make it a fall or winter wedding. You people will be celebrating Thanksgiving in November and Christmas in December. That leaves us with January open. Why don't we have it in January and start the new year off right?"

"I think January sounds good to me. I have a tour planned for just before the holidays and so January would sound best to me. What do you two think of that?"

When mother Herta said we could have it in January to start the new year off right, it reminded me of how Joseph had proposed to me on New Year's Eve and commented about starting the New Year right. I couldn't help it but I had to leave the group for a short cry. When mother saw that I left she came to me to see what the problem was. "What is the matter, Carolyn? This is supposed to be a happy time for you and here you are crying!"

"I'm sorry mother, but I just remembered how happy Joseph was when he proposed on New Year's Eve. I'll be all right."

"Carolyn, if you are going to hang onto Joseph, you are not ready to remarry! You have been planning a new life with Earl. Now either you go ahead with your plans or tell Earl that you just aren't ready to move ahead at this time."

"I am going to go ahead, mother. What has happened in the past I'll never forget and things at times will remind me of them and perhaps make me sad. What has happened is God's will in my life. I have to accept that and go on. I know that God's will for me now is to marry Earl. I guess The Lord has something for me that is going to be expensive!" I snickered a little at that thought. Mother

## Carolyn's Journal

and I returned to the others and told them nothing of why I had left and they didn't ask.

"I like the January date. The children and Carolyn can come over here and celebrate Christmas with us. Shortly after that we will be married and mother can chaperone us until you get back, Mrs. Greene!"

"That sounds good! The only thing is that the children won't get to go with Earl to get a tree!" I remarked.

"We do that here too, Carolyn. We have a wood lot on the place and we can go there and get us a tree. How would you boys and girls like that?" asked Earl.

"We would love that!" exclaimed all the children.

"Then it is set as to when we will be married. The only thing is the date and Carolyn must set that!" commented Earl.

"I would suggest that we set a date anywhere from January 5th to the 15th. I kind of like the 10th myself" I said.

"Then January tenth is what it will be. Now that, that is taken care of, we need to get moving so we can catch our boat!"

"You could just stay here! I love my grandchildren!" commented mother Herta.

"I think you have come to love my children and they have come to love you, mother Herta, but I'm afraid they can't stay. Some of them have to start school this year!"

"They could go to school over here. We have schools also!"

"Nice try, mother Herta! I couldn't do without them for that long and I have some work that I have to do there. They would be gone for five months. I would go stark raving crazy without them that long! Maybe when they get older they can come and spend some time during the summer."

"Maybe things will settle down and I can take them to Prussia and see the castle" remarked Herta.

"Is it a real castle, grandmother?" Erin was all ears when she heard the word 'castle'. She had been reading some fairy tales that took place in castles.

"It is real. It has all the things a castle is supposed to have. Like the ones in fairy tales" mother Herta responded.

"A real fairy princess castle! I know I want you to marry Earl now mother!" Erin screamed.

"Don't get so excited, Erin. We aren't married yet and it will be a long time until we are. It is almost half a year away!"

I told them, "I think you want mother Herta for a grandmother and a castle to brag to your friends about. You don't care if Earl and I are happy."

"We want those things, but we want you and Earl to be happy too." Erin was trying to be her diplomatic self.

Earl had two coaches brought around to the front of the house and we all boarded them. We traveled all night and most of the next day. We all chatted with one another as we journeyed.

## Carolyn's Journal

Before we were aware of it, we were at the dock in Southampton and ready to board the boat for home.

We went through customs and boarded the boat without incident. Earl came aboard with us.

"I'll see you about the first of December. That will give the children time to play and go with you for a tree." I remarked to Earl.

"I'll be looking for you then, but I'm going to be looking for some letters before that. I'll be writing you every day!" Earl said.

"I'll be looking for those letters, but for now you better get off or they will be taking you with us!"

"My crew knows that I am going to get off."

Erin queried, "You own this boat?"

"Yes, I do!"

"Well, 'Pon my honor! I never would have thought that!" Erin responded with excitement in her voice.

Where she got that phrase I'll never know, but it must have been from someone in southern Ohio.

Earl hurried down the gangplank waving bye as he went. I blew him a kiss and he blew one back. We had a good voyage. The children were busy looking everything over and comparing this boat to the royal yacht. The triplets were arguing about something and I heard one of them say, "We'll ask grandfather. He will know!" They had a lot of confidence in their grandfather.

We arrived in Boston Harbor and father met us at the dock. I gathered everyone together, counted noses to be certain I wasn't leaving one somewhere. I lined them up in single file. I went first down the gangplank and then came mother, then Ruth Ann with Earl and Minerva with Colleen. Then came Erin heading up the children. We marched off the boat like a mother duck and her ducklings. The other passengers watched this procedure with amazement. I guess they never saw a mother with so many children!

I had given each child their own passport to give to the agent. I had warned the children not to lose that passport, so when the agent went to take Peter's passport, Peter wouldn't let the agent have it until I assured him it was all right.

The agent looked at our passports, but did not check our baggage. I asked, "Aren't you going to check the baggage?"

"Lady, anyone who has this many children is too busy to be trying to smuggle contraband!" I had to laugh at him.

Father had gotten two surreys for us to take to my old home. The children were happy to see their grandfather again. I decided to spend about two weeks in Boston so the children could get a good chance to visit with their grandparents.

Father took the triplets into the barn and gave them a soft piece of wood for carving. He had already given them a pocket knife. Now he was showing them how to carve a piece of wood with their new knives. I left them alone. I couldn't bear to think of seeing the bloody fingers that would probably result from not being able to carve and handle the knives properly.

## Carolyn's Journal

When father and the boys had finished carving a small canoe paddle, he had them put their knives in their pocket and bring the paddles in for me to see. They had done a wonderful job. I checked their fingers and they were all there without a cut!

"Father!" I exclaimed, "How did you manage to get all three of the boys to do what you said so they didn't get their fingers cut?"

"That is a grandfather's secret!"

"Well you certainly are working miracles with those three!" "Tomorrow we are going to learn to carve something else. You better watch tomorrow because they may come up short on fingers!" He looked at me and laughed.

"Don't kid me about such things. Working with those knives worries me. They could get badly hurt with them!"

"They follow directions well! They didn't get hurt today did they?"

"They must have listened carefully today. They really love you father. They were arguing on the boat about something and I overheard one mention that they would ask you because you would know. They think you know everything!"

Mother taught Erin, Hilda and Herta how to make ginger snap cookies. The girls enjoyed that and shared them with the rest of the family. Mother also taught them how to make their beds in the morning and how to do some light housekeeping chores. This pleased the girls a lot because they were learning how to do something important to them.

Father not only taught the boys to carve, but he also taught them how to find North in case they were lost in the woods. By knowing where North is they could find their way out of the woods. He also taught them how to tell trees apart. He taught them to look at the leaves, the bark and the shape of the tree. They were soon able to pick out oak trees and maple trees. The boys really did learn and enjoyed it.

Mother and I had been going over the papers that had collected since we left and we found one that had a big article in it about Suzie marrying Charles. I can't help but feel proud of that young girl who grew up in such adverse circumstances. Her parents were so poor that they couldn't afford to buy cloth to make clothing for her. She had been beaten and almost killed by her mother, was brought to my door bleeding from her wounds, became one of my governesses, took my course and is now married to royalty. She is a true live Cinderella!

Two weeks passed quickly. Neither the children nor I were ready to go back to Ohio, but I had things to do and had to get back. Father and mother didn't want us to leave. They begged me to stay one more week. When I refused, they then wanted me to leave some of the children. I had to refuse that also. Mother said that I was being cruel to them.

"Mother, I don't mean to be cruel, but I have things to do before I go back to be married. I have to get things ready for Erin and the triplets to start school. I have shoes for the cobbler to make. I have clothes to sew for all of the children. I have my Indian class, my Indian princess council meeting and my young ladies' class to carry on to graduation."

## Carolyn's Journal

We caught two coaches and drove to Albany and then took the Erie Canal on to southern Ohio. We had come this way and it took a little longer, but it was better than that awful bumpy road by stage. It also gave me some privacy when I needed to feed Earl and Colleen.

Bob met us at Portsmouth with two surreys. Nancy came with him bringing a little baby. Nancy had, had another baby while we were gone. Bob and Nancy were very happy about the baby since two of their other children had died before we left. Bob and Nancy filled us in on all that had taken place while we were gone as we drove back to Pine Grove.

When we got home, the place looked forsaken. There were no children in the yard and there were no voices of people chatting on the porch. I got out of the surrey carrying Colleen and went to the door of the house. I opened the door and went back and got the rest of the children to the door along with their governesses. As we walked into the house and into the living room, people jumped up from everywhere and shouted, "Welcome back!"

The people of Pine Grove had gotten together and fixed dinner for us and surprised us in grand fashion! I couldn't help but cry. It was wonderful to know that they appreciated me that much!

Erin looked at me and asked, "Mother, why are you crying?"

"Because this is one of the most wonderful things that has happened to me!"

"If it is so wonderful, why are you crying?"

"Erin, you will understand someday."

I went around and hugged each person there. I even gave the preacher a hug and a kiss on the cheek! Almost everyone from the furnace was there. Ellen's mother was there and she asked me, "What do you think of Ellen's family?"

"Mrs. Jones, I think that is wonderful! She has come a long way since I first knew her."

"Thanks to you, Miss Carolyn."

Since Mrs. Jones started coming to my house, she took a big interest in how her place looked and had made it into a showplace. She had flower beds all around the house and fixed the cabin the best she could on the inside. She would say, "There just isn't much you can do with one room and a dirt floor!"

Suzie's mother and father came up and wanted to know how the wedding went. They couldn't read nor did they get a paper, so they hadn't seen the write ups in the paper. Some one had shown them the article.

"They had a beautiful wedding. It was prettier than mine and Joseph's. Her six brides maids were dressed in very light pink hoop skirt dresses. Erin was one of the bridesmaids and she has her dress with her. She can put it on for you someday. The bride had a white satin gown with a hoop skirt. She had a veil covering her face and she had a train that must have gone back twenty or twenty-five feet! Mother had fixed her hair as she had done for her when she recuperated from the beating. She was absolutely gorgeous! She was extremely happy and she didn't pop!" I laughed and Mrs. Barkley joined in. "You can be very

## Carolyn's Journal

proud of her! She has really stepped up in the world. She is now married to royalty!"

"Hilda and Herta were her flower girls. Robert was the ring bearer. Richard and Joseph were the train bearers. Everything went off as planned and she is a married woman now!"

"I wish I could have been there, but her father wouldn't go for anything. She wouldn't be married to a man of royal blood if you hadn't done for her what you did. I really do appreciate you for that!" She came up to me and gave me a big hug and I hugged her back.

"I was really proud of Suzie! It is a far cry from what she could have gotten into."

Becky had taken an interest in how she looked and had sat in on some of the course that I taught to Suzie. She would go back to her cabin and try to do some of the things I was teaching the young ladies. She took special interest in personal care. She had lost a lot of weight and was beginning to look like a different person. I got her a hair brush she could use and some of my special hair soap. Her hair was looking a lot better. Her husband began to notice the difference and took more care of himself. I was beginning to see changes all over the community.

Other people from the community of Pine Grove came to me and welcomed me back. I couldn't get over what a wonderful thing this was!

"Could I have all of your attention for a moment? I have an important announcement to make! While I was in England, I stayed with an old friend of mine and his mother. I almost married him before I married Joseph. He and I have worked things out and he has asked me to marry him again. I have accepted his proposal and we have set the date for January 10. That means I must leave here right before Thanksgiving in order to spend Christmas with him, his mother, my mother and father, and of course the children."

All of the people were silent. They were dumbfounded! Finally Bob spoke up, "You surely are not going to leave this area and go to England to live!"

All of the people awaited my answer. They had never even thought about me leaving the area! They had been thinking more along the line of me teaching their daughters my course so they might have a chance to marry well off.

"No, we will be married in England because his mother is very sick and can't travel. When we have had our honeymoon, we will travel back here to live. He is a Baron from Prussia and has a lot of business to tend to. He is going to make his headquarters for the business here instead of England so he can live here with me. I told him that I was not going to leave Pine Grove and if we married he would have to move his business here."

Erin spoke up, "And he has a real fairy tale castle!" She wanted everyone to know that because to her it was most important. Everyone laughed at Erin and came by to congratulate me. Some of the people had brought their children, so the little girls all huddled around Erin, Hilda and Herta to find out more about the castle.

## Carolyn's Journal

Ellen's mother and Ellen with her family came up to congratulate me. Ellen's mother looked at my ring and exclaimed, "Lord have mercy! Don't your hand get tired holding that ring up?"

Ellen looked at my ring and said, "That is beautiful, but I like mine better!"

"You better like yours better! Your husband isn't a Baron with so much money he doesn't know what to do with it. I'm sure yours has just as much meaning for you as mine does for me."

"You better believe that!"

"I am really proud to hear you say that. You are beginning to see things my way!"

Ellen remarked, "I am really happy for Suzie. The papers wrote her up and the wedding and I have saved those papers for her to see if she ever comes to see me. I can remember when we saw that in the papers about you and how we felt. Now Suzie has been written up in the papers and is famous."

Everyone had brought something to eat, so I suggested we go out on the porch to eat. I helped get some tables together so we could put all the food on the tables. I also suggested we have everyone go down a line on either side of the table and fill their plates. This way they could get everything they wanted and we wouldn't be passing dishes of food about the table.

"That is a good idea" Ellen said. "I don't know why we haven't done that before. Pastor, are you taking notes?" She laughed as she said this.

We got everything set up and had the pastor say grace. Then we let the children go first who were old enough to serve themselves. Then we let the mothers with little ones who couldn't serve themselves go. Finally the adults went through the line. This was the reverse of the way it usually went. Adults commented that they liked this way the best because it got the children out of the way.

Everyone ate their fill. When people who had brought food started gathering up their dishes to go home, they made a discovery. There wasn't an empty dish of food on the table, yet everyone was full, even the children!

"This is almost as it was when Jesus fed the 5,000!" the preacher commented.

"You better put a word in for Sunday services, preacher!" reminded Becky.

"Good idea! For all of those who don't know, we have services in the church on Sunday. It is open to every one of whatever faith. We welcome you. Carolyn and the singing O'Deigh's will be singing for us Sunday! If you haven't heard them, come and hear them sing!"

"Preacher! You haven't asked us yet! You have a bad habit of not asking me first!"

"You will do it, won't you, Erin?" he asked.

"We will be happy to," Erin chirped and laughed at the same time.

Everyone got their things together and bade me good evening.

Sunday morning I got Erin, Robert, Richard, Joseph, Herta, and Hilda ready for church while Ruth Ann and Minerva kept the quads and twins.

## Carolyn's Journal

Mother and I had worked with Hilda and Herta and had taught them some of the songs we usually sing. They would sing with us this Sunday. The preacher announced us and we got up, all seven of us and sang a song. The church was crowded this Sunday so the applause was loud. The crowd asked for more. I looked at the preacher for his approval and he nodded his approval. We sang one more song and there were calls for more as we finished. I had made up a little song to finish, so we sang that. It ended with Hilda and Herta singing alone the last line---"and we are the end!" I didn't think it would have any significance except to let the audience know that was the last of our singing. The audience loved hearing Hilda and Herta sing the last line. The applause lasted for about five minutes before the preacher could begin his message.

After church services a crowd grew around us and people were telling us how much they loved hearing us sing and that they were coming back next week to hear us again. I had thought they would want to come back to hear God's word expounded!

Herta and Hilda were getting compliments from the people. They complimented Erin and the triplets, but they went out of their way to compliment Herta and Hilda.

As we walked toward home, the two of them were a little 'puffed up'. Erin let them know that when the quads came into the group they would be 'has beans'.

"Is that right?" questioned Hilda.

"I'm afraid it is! Enjoy it while you can!"

"When will they be old enough, mother?" asked Herta.

"They won't be old enough until sometime next year."

"Good!" exclaimed Herta.

The first of September I took Erin and the triplets to school to get them enrolled and started. I had dressed the triplets alike. The teacher looked at them and then looked at me and asked, "How am I supposed to be able to tell them apart?"

"I'm sorry! I wasn't thinking. Tomorrow they will each have different clothing and a name tag on their clothes for you."

"That will be a big help."

After school started, I was a little freer until the four children got home. I resumed my Indian classes and the young ladies classes. The Indians were happy to get started again. The young ladies I had been teaching came with others wanting to take the course. I had to send the newcomers home with a promise of having another class for them when this one was finished.

I still had the work of helping those in need in the area. There was always something to do. Someone was always getting hurt, burned or cut at the furnace. Burns were one of the most common problems. Some children and men would occasionally get bit by a poisonous snake and they had to be treated immediately. Unfortunately some of them died. I always did what I could until the doctor came.

## Carolyn's Journal

One day a young man was charging the furnace and lost his footing and fell into the furnace with the charge! I spent most of the next week consoling his family.

The furnace operates at such a high temperature that the young man was probably dead before he hit the fire. He probably died faster than he would have had he been shot.

His people were really upset and took it very hard. I worked with them as much as I could. The shock of suddenly losing him and having no body was more than they could handle. I told them that this was God's will and that they would have to seek what God's will was for them and carry on. This wasn't much consolation, I knew, but it was what they would have to do.

After memorial services were held, they began to feel better. They had finally put him to rest and were trying to carry on.

These accidents happened at the furnace occasionally. It wasn't a regular thing, but they did happen and I attempted to help those in need. One of the men who survived the blast that killed Joseph, lost one eye from the explosion.

We now had several furnaces in blast. The newer ones were Vesuvius and Lawrence. These furnaces were turning out iron at an unprecedented rate - 10 to 16 tons of iron a day at each furnace.

John Campbell started some of these furnaces either alone or with a company that he headed. The forests were beginning to disappear and the odor from the furnaces was terrible at times.

What price we do pay in the name of progress!

This was the second year I went to the indian council and I was told ahead of time and was prepared. It was during this council meeting that the chiefs gave me various items. I was given the name of Princess Snowflake which means that I am one of a kind. I was given the jewelry to take home this year. They gave me a beautiful white mare that I called Princess. Other chiefs gave me a saddle, a blanket and a bridle. The leather on the bridle and the saddle was studded with silver. I thought they were very beautiful.

This year I found a better way up the prominence for me. The indians could not go this way because a secret door only opened for me, just as the throne only moved for me.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Fourteen SHE GETS HER BARON

It was coming up on Thanksgiving and my family and I would soon be on our way to England. I packed the clothes the children would wear. I packed my ball gown, necklace and tiara again. I got out the passports for all of us. I put the smaller children's things in my trunk with my clothes so I could get to their clothes easier.

The day came for us to leave and I was getting a surrey ready when Bob and Nancy drove up. He had two surreys and was ready to take us to Union Landing.

We caught the boat for Pittsburgh and then the bumpy, long ride to Boston. Someone had worked on the road some for it wasn't quite as bumpy. The children were all excited about getting to be a part of my wedding as well as get a real fairy tale castle, a new father and another grandmother.

We arrived in Boston almost on schedule and father was there to meet us. He was happy to see the children and they were happy to see him again. We gave our usual greetings and got into father's two surreys and drove to my old home. Mother was on tour in Europe and would meet us at Earl's mansion in England.

The next day we all boarded a boat, after going through customs. Father was really good with the children. He showed them things about the boat such as how the boat worked and just about anything concerning the boat.

Father told them about whales and that Jonah had been inside a whale. (Actually the Bible says that the Lord prepared a big fish.) He told them about how a porpoise will shove things to shore and because of this they sometimes help shipwrecked sailors by pushing them to shore.

He told them about the flying fish. They soar from wave top to wave top and don't fly. One day he was sitting on deck talking with the children when a flying fish landed at his feet on the deck. He then showed the children how it looked and soared, then he tossed it back into the ocean.

He showed the children the great Gulf Stream and how one could tell it. It was greenish in color and the ocean on either side was a deep purple-blue. Father just didn't seem to run out of things to show or tell the children and they loved him for it.

One day father came to me and asked, "Are you quite certain you want to go through with this marriage? I have some bad feelings about this!"

"Father, I have looked at the whole thing. I have prayed about this and each time it comes up for me to go ahead. Besides I do love him!"

"Are you quite certain that it is love and not pity for him, his mother or yourself?"

"I don't understand."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Do you really love him or are you marrying him to have a man who will take a widow and twelve children? Do you feel sorry for him because you know he never had any love in his marriage with Aggy? Do you feel sorry for Herta because she always wanted grandchildren and never had any? These are things I am concerned about."

"These are things I have been thinking about also. As I said, I have prayed about this and I always come up with the same answer - You love him. Marry him!"

"Carolyn, you are a grown woman and can do what you please, but I am your father who still loves you and am proud of you. I don't mean to pry into your business, but I do want to make certain that you will be happy and certain because if you are not, this will never work out and you will be stuck with your decision the rest of your life!"

"I appreciate your concern, father and I know what you are saying. I have considered all these things and it still comes up for me to go ahead."

"I'll say no more!"

We arrived in Southampton and Earl had two coaches waiting for us. We went through customs and into the coaches for Earl's mansion. Father was showing the children the vegetation and the animals. A deer bounded across the road in front of the coaches. Another time a hare hopped happily across the road and then a turtle was on the road. The coach ran over the turtle shell. The children wanted to know if the turtle would live and father assured them that the turtle would live because his shell was tough!

We arrived at Earl's mansion where mother, mother Herta, Earl, Jeeves and all the household servants met us on the porch! We all gave our usual greetings. The children were telling mother all about the trip as I greeted Earl with a big hug and kiss that he returned. I looked at him and asked, "You still in the mind to marry me?"

"Don't be foolish! You know I am!"

We heard horses' hooves clattering on the drive. We all looked and there was Suzie and Charles coming to see us! I said, "Suzie you look so happy you could pop!" I laughed.

"You are right, mother and I love this fellow more all the time!"

Father, Charles and Earl all started carrying the trunks and bags into the mansion. They wanted to get the trunks and bags unloaded so they could get the horses put up. That is what THEY said. I think they just wanted to get away from the female talk!

"I guess that you know that Ellen has one child and will have twins before we get back!"

"I'm happy for her."

We continued talking as we went into the mansion. They were carrying the trunks up to the bedrooms. I wanted to see which rooms all of my children were to be in so I could tend to them.

"Miss Erin will have this room to herself. Is that all right with you, Erin?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Yes, it will be! You remembered! Thank-you father!" Erin quickly responded.

Earl mentioned to me, "You must sleep in the marriage bedroom by yourself. This will change when we are married, I hope!"

Everyone was given a room and we all took advantage of it as we got ready for lunch. After freshening up a bit, I stepped into the hallway and there was Earl ready to escort me to the Banquet room. I said, "I'll race you downstairs!"

"I haven't forgotten your little tricks! You cheat, so we will both ride the banister like we did years ago. I go first and then you."

We rode the banister and laughed and enjoyed it all the way down. When we got off, I heard a noise and here came ten little ones down the banister! The only thing that kept it from being twelve was the fact that Earl and Colleen were too small to do it. It was a sight to behold. I laughed until I cried. Earl laughed too.

"I can see we have to watch what we do around here!"

"That is for certain!" replied Earl.

All of the children were laughing and giggling about how much fun that was as we went into the banquet room.

I asked Earl how we were going to sit and he arranged the children and father. I took the place I had before.

"No honey, you will sit here now!" He put me on the side where his mother had always sat.

"You just kick your mother out?"

"No, she will sit in your old place. Because we are getting married, you are now next to me as I shelter you. Before mother was the one I sheltered."

"I guess that puts me up in the world another notch?"

"If you want to think so. As you know I always say grace at the table, so can we have everyone's attention as I do?"

All of the children quieted down and dutifully folded their hands over their plates as Earl said grace.

We all enjoyed lunch as it was not only delicious, but it wasn't bobbing or rolling. None of us got seasick coming over, but one tires of bobbing and rolling like a cork after a while.

Suzie jumped up to help the children with their plates.

"Suzie! You don't have to do that anymore!"

"I'm sorry, mother. It was just natural for me to do that."

"She is like that with my cousins too!"

"I've done it for so long with these children that it is second nature for me to do it."

"I guess I trained you too well then didn't I, Suzie?" I laughed. "I guess you know that you are famous in America now."

"No, I didn't know that. How am I so famous?"

"You have been written up in the papers when you married Charles. Everyone in Pine Grove who can read or afford a paper has kept those papers."

## Carolyn's Journal

Ellen has them saved and is waiting until she can show you. All the parents of girls are wanting me to teach my course to their children in hopes that it will result in their girl or girls marrying well off."

"I guess that makes me like you. Ellen and I felt that way about you when we saw that in the papers that time."

"Yes, and I dare say that you felt like you would have to be all cleaned up and looking pretty all the time."

"We certainly did! How did you know that?"

"I just know. I'm not your mother for nothing."

"I guess I'll learn when I become a mother."

After lunch, we all went into the living room to hear mother play the harp. Mother always plays the harp after lunch if she can. She claims that it helps the food digest better.

Earl insisted that he and I sit on the love seat. There was a warm fire in the fireplace, but I didn't see any signs of decoration for Christmas.

Father spoke up, "I'll take the children into the parlor for story time."

"It may be cold in there! We haven't put a fire in there because we weren't using it. Why don't you include all of us in your story time?" Earl asked.

"If everyone wants me to. Mother if you will play along as I tell the story it will add to it."

"I'll do the best I can" mother agreed.

Mother began to play and father began his story. All of the children listened raptly. Even the adults listened so it was hard to tell who was the biggest child. When the story was over, everyone applauded. Father looked surprised that they had.

"You ought to write those stories down and have them published!"

"I can't very well write them down. Most of the time I make them up as I go along."

Earl leaned over to me and whispered in my ear, "You know that I am holding a ball in your honor on January 5!"

"Thanks for telling me!"

Charles whispered to father, "When you get a chance, I would like to see you alone. I have something very important to talk to you about."

"I'll come over when I can get away from the others." Father thought that it had something to do with his story telling or the wedding.

I suggested that we all start making some decorations for the living room.

"Those of you who want, may like to go for a tree tomorrow."

"That sounds like fun! We will all help make decorations, won't we?" asked Joseph.

All the children agreed with big smiles on their faces.

The Baron had an old corn popper that was put into the fireplace to pop corn. Earl didn't have any pop corn on hand, so he sent a servant to go see if some neighbor might have some they would share.

## Carolyn's Journal

We punched holes in the ginger bread cookies the cook had made and put them on a string. We didn't have many to string because they were being eaten faster than they were being strung! I caught one of the culprits. It was the Baron. He had his mouth full of cookies. I looked around and father had his mouth full of cookies too! As I looked closer, I found the children and just about everyone was eating the cookies!

"If we eat the cookies, what are we going to have to hang for decoration?" I probed.

With his mouth full of cookie, Earl said, "The 'ook 'ill 'ake 'or!"

"I didn't understand that. You had your mouth full of cookie!"

He swallowed the cookie and reiterated, "I said, the cook will make more!"

That I understood. I went to the cook and told him that he better get his cookies going because these were disappearing fast and we needed more for the tree.

When the cookies were all gone and few strung, I got the children started cutting shapes out of old newspapers. When they were finished cutting, we strung them on a string to be hung as decorations.

The servant returned with some pop corn and Earl started popping the corn. Mother Herta, mother, father, Suzie and Charles began to string the corn. I noticed the corn was going like the cookies, but Earl had to pop it so I figured he could eat it.

"Do you people over here have any kind of nut that we can use?" I asked.

"There are some walnuts if we can find some."

"I have some chestnuts I bought the other day. We can use them" replied Suzie.

The living room soon looked like a disaster area after the children had tried to cut shapes from the newspapers, but it was a good learning experience for them. We strung everything that had been cut to be hung. Nothing was too bad to be strung. This encouraged the children and made them happy to see their work strung and hanging. Ruth Ann, Minerva and Suzie had gotten into cutting shapes and enjoyed it as much as the children.

The cook came out with another batch of gingerbread cookies to be strung. These mostly got strung because the principal cookie eaters were full of cookies and popped corn.

Everything was looking in a festive mood! It made me feel better about Christmas coming.

It was getting late by the time we had finished and it was time for the children and some of the rest of us to get to bed. Erin objected, "We haven't had any dinner yet!"

She was right! We had been so busy decorating that we had forgotten all about eating dinner! We all went to the dinning hall and sat down to eat. The cook brought out some delicious vegetable soup! When the soup had been eaten and every one was ready, we went back to the living room. It was dark in there

## Carolyn's Journal

now. The candles in the chandelier were lit and it was raised into position. It really was a beautiful sight!

I took the children to their rooms and to bed. I tucked them all in and kissed them good night. I turned and looked and there was Earl following me along kissing the children good night on their foreheads!

It was a high point in my anticipation of a new life with Earl. I was going to be a Baroness, something mother had wanted and I didn't. I was going to have the best of two lives - one in Pine Grove and one in England or Prussia. I was really happy and as Suzie would say, "I'm so happy I could pop!"

Mother Herta was happy also. She enjoyed having everyone, especially the children, around her. She had changed from a sickly, dying person to a vibrant, jovial person. This get-together had been really good for her!

Mother and father enjoyed this because it gave them more time with me and their grandchildren!

Ruth Ann was enjoying the trip. She missed her parents, but she had adopted me as her mother, so she didn't feel so terribly bad. This was one of the few trips she had ever taken anywhere. Her parents were too busy working and struggling to make a living to take her and her brothers anywhere. Her eyes would get bigger each time she saw something different. She made sure she was with the children each time father told them a story or when he showed the children something about the earth. She was learning a lot whether she enjoyed the trip or not.

Earl said that he was enjoying this get-together, but whether he was or not, I had no way of knowing. He was somewhat aloof to all the things going on. What his problem was, I did not know. He could have been concerned about one of his many businesses. All I know is that he said he was enjoying this.

As things so often happen, the joyous times are shadowed by sad times.

The next morning after the trip to the woods for a tree, father went to see what Charles' wanted.

"May I call you Richard?" Charles asked of father.

"Certainly! That is my name."

"Richard, I think you should know that rumor has it, and it is just a rumor, that Earl has been checking on Boarding Schools for the older children. He has looked at schools here in England and Prussia. He seems to be planning to put the older children in Boarding School to get rid of them. I heard that he also plans to put the smaller ones in the care of two new governesses instead of the two Carolyn presently has. They would have complete charge of the children! I'm telling you this because I am quite certain Carolyn doesn't know nor would she want her children taken from her in this manner!"

"I'm glad you told me this. I know Carolyn would not marry him if this were true and she knew about it!"

"There is something else that involves you. He believes that you gave Joseph, Carolyn's first husband, half your business when he married Carolyn and Earl thinks he will pick that up when he marries Carolyn!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"He will have a big surprise there! I never gave Joseph anything except a position of executive vice president. This was so that if anything happened to me, he could take over the business. When he died, that died with him! I appreciate your telling me this. I will not tell Carolyn where it came from. I know you and Earl are good friends and I wouldn't want to break that up."

"I will probably come over later with Suzie."

Father came back to Earl's mansion and caught me in the afternoon late and told me what was being rumored about Earl. I caught Earl in a few minutes and I took him for a walk in the gardens. The gardens were all dead, but I wanted to get him alone.

"Earl, do you really love me?"

"You know I do."

"Do you love my twelve children?"

"I really do. They are great children!"

"Then why have you been checking boarding schools in England and Prussia so you can send the older ones there away from me?"

"Who told you that?"

"Earl, you look at me. Do I look like Aggy?"

"Never! You are more beautiful and smarter than Aggy ever was!"

"Thank you. Now tell me the truth. Have you or have you not been checking those boarding schools for the children? Don't you lie to me! Tell me the truth and then explain yourself!" I looked sharply at Earl.

"I will tell you the truth. I see you are upset over this so I will tell you what I did and why. I did check boarding schools for the older children because I love them and I want them to have the very best!"

"Why didn't you say something to me? I have a big say in this! They are my children and I love them very much. If something affects them, it affects me. You could have talked to me about it and you would have found out that I don't want them in a boarding school. I want them to go as far as they can in public school in America. The boys will go on to Latin School and then on to whatever college or university they choose. Meanwhile I will have them with me until they are old enough to go to college."

"Now I didn't know that. I was planning a surprise for you and the children. I thought you would like my plan. Almost everyone in England looks forward to a good boarding school and many Americans come over here to do just that. I thought you would appreciate that."

"I know that you must have gone to a lot of work to find those things out. I appreciate your thoughts and efforts, but my children are stay home children. They will not board! Now why did you plan two Prussian governesses for my other children?"

"For the same reason as the boarding schools."

"I have the best governesses I want. Ruth Ann and Minerva are just fine. I don't know how I could do any better! Suzie, who married Charles, was a very good governess! This whole thing sounds like to me that you were planning to get

## Carolyn's Journal

rid of the children so it would just be you and me! If so, then I will break this engagement off right now and go back to the states! There are too many of these absentee parents around. I'll not be a part of it! If you love me, you love my children and accept what they have and who they are. My children will be married to whomever I marry. If you can't accept that, then I will break this off now! I want to tell you something else. When I married Joseph, my father did not give him half the business. He gave Joseph a title and a position in the business, but when Joseph was killed that went with him. Father has been sending me money to live on since Joseph's death. If you marry me you get nothing except the children and me."

"Wow! I believe you are angry! When I see it from your point of view, I can see why you would be angry. I'm really sorry! I won't do anything like that again unless you agree. As far as your father's business, I know he wouldn't give Joseph half his business. Your father is a shrewd business man and I could not see him doing that. I am a financier also and I know how they think. Please give me credit for some brains! As far as calling off the wedding, do what you want and think best. I still love you and I love your children. Mother loves the children too and they have been a good influence on her during this past week. Mother is looking and doing a lot better. I don't want to break up, but if you do, do it now. I still want to marry you as I did years ago. Things haven't changed for me."

"I have come to love you too, Earl! I would break up in a minute if I thought you didn't want the children!"

"I'll tell you what I will do to make this up to you. I will get the children together and ask them what they want to do the most while they are here in England. Whatever they say we will do! Will that help to make you feel better?"

"I don't know. It depends on what they want to do."

"I expect they will say they want to go to my castle in Prussia. I can hear Erin saying that now. If they do, we'll go there next week. If that meets your approval!"

"That would certainly meet my approval, if they ask for that."

"I would bet on that."

We kissed and made up. We went into the house and got the children together so Earl could ask them what they wanted to do the most.

"Boys and girls, if there was one thing you could do while you are here in England and Europe, what would you want to do?"

"You mean just here in England?" questioned Erin.

"No. Anywhere in Europe, not just England."

"I'd like to go see your castle then" answered Erin.

"What about the rest of you, any of you?"

Erin shouted, "We all want to see your castle, don't we?"

"Yes!" Shouted all the rest of the children.

"If that is what you want, we will go the week after Christmas. Will that be all right with you Erin?"

"That will be fine with me, Father!" replied Erin laughing.

## Carolyn's Journal

The children were really happy. They were looking forward to seeing the castle. It wasn't just any old castle. It was going to be a part of their lives soon. It would be one of their homes. They were very proud of having a real castle in the family!

"Are we going too?" Ruth Ann wanted to know.

"Of course! Everyone will go. Even my mother and Carolyn's mother and father. We will stay a week for this time, but there will be more times later."

"It is time you boys and girls took off for bed." I followed along to tuck them in and to let them know I love them too. Earl came along with me and assured each of the children that he loved them too. They each kissed him on the cheek and he kissed them on the forehead. This became a regular nightly ritual. I was beginning to believe that Earl had told me the truth. It is terrible to have doubts in your mind about whether your loved one has told you the truth or not.

Father said that he wanted to see me in a few minutes, privately. I excused myself from Earl and went to see what father wanted.

"What have you found out? Was he planning to separate you from your children?"

"He says he wasn't and he gave me a good excuse, but I don't know whether to believe him or not yet."

"What about my business?"

"He said that he knew you were smarter than to give half your business to Joseph."

"He is right about that. Since he is right about that, perhaps he is right about the other too!"

"I hope so" I said.

"I guess we better all get to bed."

Earl came up to me and said, "May I take the most beautiful woman in the world to her bed chamber?"

"Yes, you may, but not in it. Just to it!"

"Thank-you kind lady. I shall love you forever!"

He took me to my bed chamber and we kissed good night. Mother stuck her head out of her door and said, "Watch that! You still aren't married!"

"Yes, mother." I said as I opened the door and went into this huge bed chamber. In about a month I would be married and this would be my bedroom in England and in Prussia an even bigger bedroom. I should say a bed chamber. I guess I will get used to it.

Christmas came and the next day we were all getting aboard Earl's yacht. He had bought a newer and faster one. He headed for Prussia and let the children who were big enough, steer the yacht. He let father try his hand at it and Ruth Ann. Ruth Ann never ceased to amaze me. She was as big a child as any of mine!

We arrived in Coblenz and took two carriages to Earl's castle. The children and Ruth Ann had been all atwitter about the castles on the Rhine. Now they were going to see a castle close up and live in it for a short while.

## Carolyn's Journal

We pulled up in front of the castle and Erin was jumping up and down shouting, "It is a fairy tale castle! It has towers and spires and all those things! It really is great!" She just kept babbling on about the castle.

The triplets were less impressed, "So what! It's just a place to stay!" They evidently did not share their sister's enthusiasm.

Hilda and Herta, the twins, were almost as excited as Erin. They hadn't read or heard as many fairy tales as Erin.

Ruth Ann just stood looking up at the castle with her mouth open. She had never seen anything like this before. She looked like she expected a king or a queen to come out the door at any time and welcome us. Ordinary people living in a castle like this was too much for her to comprehend.

Father was interested in the architecture of the castle. He thought it wonderful that people in times of the crusades and before could build as large and beautiful a building as this that would last for centuries!

"I just can't get over the work that went into these castles and buildings and they are still standing!" father said.

"Yes, this castle took about twenty years to build. They cut the stones, hewed them and set them in place. If they didn't fit exactly, they took them out and hewed the place that needed correction until the stone fit perfectly. Those furnaces in Ohio are built similarly" commented Earl.

"I guess they will last as long as there is a piece of them!" Laughed Ruth Ann. We all laughed at her statement. I was surprised to hear Ruth Ann make any comment. She was always the quiet one. Suzie on the other hand always entered the conversation. Perhaps this was opening a little crack in Ruth Ann's armor.

We went inside the castle and got all the children settled in their rooms. Erin got her single room and was so happy she kissed Earl on the cheek, "Thank you, father!"

If anyone could win Earl over to loving the children, it would be Erin. She was a born politician. If she had been a boy, I'm sure she would run for president and win! The children got Earl cornered and made him show them all over the castle. They went through all of the secret passages and even into the dungeon. It was here that Peter suggested they lock Erin up and leave her because she was too bossy! They went to the armor room and saw the armor that the knights wore into battle. They went every where! They absolutely wore poor Earl out! He was so tired that he fell asleep in his chair! We had to wake him for dinner.

After dinner, we all went back to the living room and mother played the harp while we all sang and everyone, including mother Herta, seemed to be happy and enjoying the evening together.

"I hate to be the one to break this up, but its time we all got to bed boys and girls." I gathered all the children together and marched them and their governesses to their rooms. I did my usual nightly chore and Earl followed me as usual. He was showing a lot of interest in the children since our talk. I wasn't certain if he were putting on a show or if he really cared for the children.

## Carolyn's Journal

When all of the children were tucked in, Earl turned to me and asked, "May I see you to your bed chamber?"

"I don't know anything that has stopped you so far!"

"I'd like to be able to tuck you in and kiss you good night as we did the children, but I'll have to be satisfied with a good night kiss." He embraced me and kissed me very passionately.

Mother stuck her head out of her door and said, "Watch that! You aren't married yet!" Mother was going to play her part of a chaperone to the hilt!

The next morning the children were up early and made certain that none of the rest of us slept in. Erin was the leader of the pack. She led the charge to all the bedrooms and woke everyone up. Then she rode the banister down to the dining room with nine others in hot pursuit!

When I caught up with her, I admonished her and told her that she better not do that again! If she did, she would have me to contend with and several angry adults scowling down at her!

"I just want to see everything and for that I need an early start!"

"You may need an early start, but some of the rest of us don't need an early start. You better not get too big for your britches! If you do, I can take care of that for you!"

"I'm sorry mother! I didn't mean any harm."

"You will apologize to the rest of the family at breakfast. Then we will talk about what we are going to do today."

"I will mother."

At breakfast after Earl had said grace, Erin spoke up and said, "I have something mother says I must say. I'm sorry I woke you all up this morning. I'll not do it again. Please forgive me."

"You are forgiven," said mother Herta. "We all know that you are excited about being here!"

"That is fine, mother Herta, but she better not pull that again" I said.

"She is just an excited little girl! Don't be so hard on her!"

Earl looked at Erin and asked, "What would you like to do today?"

"I wanted to go around the grounds and see how much land you have with this castle and what else there is."

"I guess that is what we will do today. Tomorrow it will be the triplet's turn to tell what they want to do. Each day we will let a group born together tell what they want to do and do it. Is that fair boys and girls?" asked Earl.

All of the children shouted, "Yes!"

The children kept Earl busy keeping his promise. By the end of the week, he was looking a little haggard. He wouldn't admit it. I'm certain he was glad to see the end of THAT week!

I went with mother and mother Herta to see Gramma's grave. The old home had been sold to settle the estate. It had been razed for the mansion at mother Herta's place.

## Carolyn's Journal

Mother Herta looked at mother and asked, "Did I tell you the court found the fellow guilty and they executed him by beheading. He won't kill or attack any other innocent woman!"

"You hadn't told me. I wish it all hadn't happened. I had just gotten back with my mother and I would have liked to have several more years with her. I know she would have loved to have been with her grandchild and her great grandchildren. She loved them all."

"We all loved her too, mother, but God had other plans for her! The children adored her also. God has a reason for everything! Look how he has guided my life!"

"He certainly has! If he hadn't, you would have been Mrs. Von Ribbonauff a long time ago!" replied mother.

We came back to the castle. Earl and the children were somewhere. Father was looking at how the castle had been made. Every stone was perfect. He just couldn't get enough of the architecture and the building. It was something that really interested him. He went up in the towers and looked at how they were made. He looked at all of the arches. By the time we were ready to leave the castle, he was knowledgeable enough about the castle construction that I am sure he could have built one!

We all took a look in the family cemetery and looked at Aggy and her baby's graves. It made me feel bad because the two of us grew up together. We didn't always see eye to eye, but we were very good friends. It is just too bad that she had to do the foolish thing she did.

## Carolyn's Journal

### CONFINED! Chapter Fifteen

We went back to England at the end of the week and the Ball was upon us before we realized it. I had to make certain that all of the children got baths and were scrubbed clean. I started on my hair.

After lunch we adults started making certain that we had all the items of clothing and accessories that we were going to need. I got out the necklace and tiara that mother Herta had given me.

When I had finished putting on my gown and was about ready, I put on the necklace and tiara. Mother looked at me and remarked, "You don't look any older than you did at the Ball he held for you years ago!"

"Thank you, mother. This evening I don't feel any older either, but I know I am."

By the time everyone was dressed and I had given my hair a few last brushes, it was time for us to be announced for the Ball. I got all of the children, mother, father, Ruth Ann and Minerva in my room so we could all go down the crystal staircase. I got everyone in the order they would be announced by Earl.

Earl announced, "The first ones to come down the crystal staircase are my future in-laws, Mr. and Mrs. Richard Greene. Mrs. Greene is, as you know, the greatest harpist the world has ever known and she will be playing at our wedding!" The guests all applauded.

"The next to come down the staircase is Miss Ruth Ann, a governess, carrying Colleen who is too small to walk yet!"

"Miss Minerva is next carrying Earl, a twin to Colleen - also too little to walk."

"On their heels are two of the quadruplets coming under their own power, Peter and Paul."

"The next two to come down are the other part of the quadruplets, Kelly and Shannon."

"The twins you see coming next were named for Carolyn's and my mother, Hilda and Herta."

"The three you see next are the triplets. They are as you can see, identical, so don't ask me to tell you which one is which! They are named for a friend, Carolyn's father and their father, Robert, Richard and Joseph. The three of them bowed to the audience after their introduction. The guests all loved that!"

"The eldest of this family I am about to acquire is the spokesman for the group, Miss Erin O'Deigh. Her brother, Peter wanted to lock her in the dungeon of my castle because he said that she was too bossy!" The guests laughed at this. Erin had on the same type gown as I and had her hair fixed like mine. She was a perfect copy of me. When I went out on the staircase, she was at the bottom and I at the top. They oo'ed and awed when they saw the two of us standing there.

Earl continued, "The woman that I am holding this Ball in honor of, my love, my future bride and the mother of these twelve lovely children, Mrs. Carolyn

## Carolyn's Journal

Greene O'Deigh! Of course you realize the one at the bottom of the staircase is not my bride to be, but will some day, no doubt, turn men and boy's hearts as her mother has mine!"

The guests broke out in applause and Erin walked in a dignified manner over to the Baron, motioned him to bend down and then kissed him on the cheek. The guests awed at that. I was really proud of my little brood! Of course you realize I am prejudiced!

I was told later that as I walked down the staircase it looked like I had a halo over my head.

When I got to the bottom of the staircase, Earl took my arm and we went to the Orchestra and started the Ball.

Several members of royalty were there. My good friend Princess Féodore was there.

Some young men asked Ruth Ann to dance with them and she refused. I discovered that I had neglected to teach her to dance this type of dance! I grabbed one of the boys and asked him, "Would you mind teaching Ruth Ann to dance this type of dance? I'm sorry that I didn't do this before the Ball."

The boy looked at me and said, "It would be my pleasure, if she will let me!"

Ruth Ann was a little red faced from embarrassment, but she readily agreed to let him teach her. I think she liked the attention the boy was giving her because she spent the remainder of the evening with the boy learning to dance and Ruth Ann was a fast learner!

Minerva knew how to dance all the dances and did with all who asked her. She enjoyed the evening.

When the Ball was over and Earl and I were seeing the guests out, Ruth Ann came up to me with this boy. She told me, "James would like to court me. May he court me in your parlor in America?" I looked at James and asked, "Do you plan to come to America?"

"I'll go anywhere to court Ruth Ann! I believe I love her and I think she is beautiful!"

"She is a lovely girl!" I looked at Ruth Ann, "Of course you may court in my parlor!"

Ruth Ann looked at me and said, "Mother, you are the very best!" She kissed me on the cheek.

James queried, "Are you her mother too?"

"No. She has adopted me as her mother because I have taken her in to help me as a governess."

All the guests left except James and he stood facing Ruth Ann holding her hands.

She looked at him and said, "Thanks for a lovely evening. I don't know what I would have done if you had not taught me that dance!"

She stepped up next to him and kissed him on the cheek. He dropped her hands as he turned to leave. His parents came back for him and then they all left.

## Carolyn's Journal

Ruth Ann looked dreamy eyed and I knew I was going to have to soon get another governess!

Everyone went to bed that evening tired. Little Erin had danced with several grown men and they commented to me later how ladylike and poised she was.

Erin didn't waste much time getting to sleep that night nor did she wake anyone the next morning.

When I went in for the 2:00 AM. feeding, Ruth Ann was there to help. She asked me a million questions, but the biggest question she wanted to know the answer to was "How do you know you are really in love with someone?"

When we finished with the babies, I sat with her and talked. I told her about love and how we could know we were really in love.

She told me when I had finished my 'Great Speech', "I just can't sleep for thinking of him! I have never felt this way about any boy before! I'm a little confused by it."

"You go try to get some rest. If you keep feeling this way and he comes to court you in America, he loves you and you love him. If you lose interest in him after a while, he is not for you."

"I'm sorry to take up your time mother, but I had to know if I am crazy or something. You have helped me a lot. Thank you very much!" She went off to bed.

By this time the sun was beginning to come over the horizon, but I didn't care. I was happy with the Ball and the fact that Ruth Ann had reached out to me.

January tenth arrived and this was my wedding day! I would soon be Baroness Von Ribbonauff! I fixed my hair as Earl liked it the best and got into my wedding gown. It was truly the most beautiful gown I have ever seen! I thought the one I married Joseph in was the most beautiful, but this one exceeded it. Mother and mother Herta had picked out the style and the material this time. They really had done a wonderful job.

A little addition to the ceremony I had requested was that when I was supposed to say 'I do' to the ministers questions, the children all would come up and we would all say 'I do' together. That meant to me that Earl was not only marrying me, but all of my children also. This may not seem very important to others, but it was to me. Earl agreed to the change readily.

Earl and I prepared to go on our honeymoon after the ceremony. We went to the castle in Prussia and that monstrous marriage chamber. Now we would sleep together in the bed - which would perhaps make that room seem smaller.

We returned to England in a week and mother and father gave us all the papers to see what had been said about us.

We looked at all of the papers and laughed at some and were upset with others. All in all it was fun seeing what they were saying about us.

The next day we began preparations for our return trip to the States and Ohio. Earl wanted to take us on his yacht so his yacht would be handy for him at

## Carolyn's Journal

Pine Grove. We would stop for a while in Boston for mother and father to get used to not having their grandchildren. After that we would go on to Pine Grove.

I was almost as bad as Ruth Ann! Each day I grew more and more in love with Earl. He was kind! He was considerate! He was Gentle! He was everything I had ever wanted in a man! He was no Joseph and he would in no way take his place, but he was Earl and he fulfilled his place in my life! I loved him more because of this!

When we arrived in Boston, we spent two weeks there and then headed for home. Earl was good to the children and with them. He was almost as good as father! Earl showed the children many things about the trip south and around the tip of Florida into the Gulf of Mexico. He explained to them that this is where the great gulf stream gets its start. He showed them the way into the great Mississippi River. Once in the river, he had to spend time watching for shallow water as the river was always changing. Sand bars would appear today where they weren't yesterday. It was a trick to go up the river without hitting the floating debris also. He and the crew watched carefully as we went up the river to where the Ohio River joins it. Here we had to go around a falls on the Ohio. Earl watched everything very carefully and traveled slowly. Not too slow for if you did, the current would throw the yacht off course and we would wind up on a sand bar.

The children were watching this very close and I don't think Ruth Ann's mouth closed all the way up the two rivers!

I was more at ease with Earl about the children and they did love him. They would gather around him, some on his lap and some on the floor in front of him while he told them things about his ancestors. He told them how he became a Baron in Prussia and what his title meant to him and what it should mean to them.

The only one of the children who really remembered their own father was Erin and she didn't remember much because she was so young! Earl was the only father they knew! This is sad to say, but it is the truth!

We arrived at Union Landing where Bob and Nancy met us to take us home! It seemed like we had been away for years!

"What has happened since we left? I see more smoke and the fumes are almost suffocating!"

"We have more furnaces that have begun operations" answered Bob.

We arrived at our house, opened the door and went in. Everything had been covered with sheets, but everything was dusty. It was going to take me a while before I would have things back to normal.

We found a start of termites in the kitchen, so we had the wood removed that was affected and had the nest dug up. The nest and the bad wood were put under a meiler that was being built. The termites probably thought they had died and gone to heaven when they saw all that fresh wood in the meiler, but when the fire began to burn the wood, I guess they thought they had gone to the other place!

The wood in the house that had been affected was replaced with good wood and everything was back to normal.

## Carolyn's Journal

Earl loved the house and decided it would give better insulation and look better if the clapboards were taken off and replaced with brick veneer! Termites are not known for eating bricks!

I agreed, so for the next several weeks the wood was taken off and the brick veneer laid in its place. It made the house look much better!

I put Erin and the triplets in school again and came back home to begin cleaning the house. Just as I was about to begin work, I heard voices coming up the drive. I looked out the parlor window and there was a group of ladies coming to the door. Ellen's mother was leading the group. I opened the door and asked, "May I help you ladies in some way?"

Ellen's mother looked at me and said, "You can't help us today. We have come to clean your house for you! Just sit and enjoy yourself while we work!"

I was dumbfounded! These ladies were cleaning my house for me! It made tears come to my eyes just thinking of what a wonderful thing they were doing for me. This was almost as good as the surprise meal they had given me the last time!

The ladies worked most of the day and by dinner time they had everything cleaned. Earl came home just as they were finishing, so I introduced him to the ladies.

"Ladies, I thank you for what you have done for me today! Now you all know that I went back to England to remarry. May I present my husband Baron Von Ribbonauff? You may call him Baron if you wish. He will be living and working here in Pine Grove from now on."

Nancy asked, "Do we curtsy in his presence?"

"Just act normal, ladies. Baron is only a title," answered Earl.

School had let out a long time ago. Being busy, I forgot the children! I was supposed to pick them up a long time ago and now they are probably waiting for me and crying because I hadn't come for them. I grabbed my coat and hat and started for the children.

Earl asked, "Where are you going, honey?"

"I completely forgot to pick up the children after school! Poor things are probably scared to death and crying! I've got to hurry over there!"

"I figured you were busy, so I picked them up a long time ago."

"Where are they? I haven't seen them!"

"We are right here, mother. May we come in now?" asked Erin.

"Of course you may! Who told you that you couldn't come in?"

"Father told us to stay out of the area the ladies were cleaning, so we thought it best to stay out of the house."

"You must be frozen! Come in and get warm by the fire."

"We aren't frozen mother. We went into the chicken house and watched the chickens. It was warm in there." Erin responded.

"We even got to see a hen lay an egg!" Put in Joey excitedly.

"I hope you remembered to clean your feet good before you came into our clean house!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"We were careful to not get our shoes dirty in there. We wouldn't want our house to smell like that place!" Informed Erin.

"You boys and girls are just getting too smart for your mother!" I laughed "Yeah!" They exclaimed as they grabbed me around the legs and almost knocked me down. Earl just stood there and laughed at me trying to keep from falling. He was certainly a lot of help! I told the children, "Go attack your father that way and see if he can stand up!"

They obediently went over and attacked Earl and he picked them up one at a time and gave each one a kiss on the forehead.

"If I had known I was going to be kissed by a good-looking man, I would have attacked him first!" Erin giggled.

Erin went skipping out of the kitchen to find Hilda and Herta to play with. They were her sisters and she liked playing with them.

It was this spring that I went to the third and final Indian council meeting.

One day I went into the living room and Earl grabbed me and gave me a big kiss. I asked, "What is the problem? What have you done wrong now?"

"What makes you think that?"

"By all the hugging and kissing!"

"I see that I can't keep a secret from you! I got a letter from mother today and she wants me to come and bring her here for a while. She says she misses the children!"

"She thinks she needs you to get her?"

"Yes. She isn't too sure if she can make the journey by herself.

"You know I love your mother and if she wants to come here, then by all means go and fetch her! The children will be happy to see her again! They love her too."

"I'll make plans to go and bring her back."

"I better stay and keep the children in school."

Earl went off to Prussia to get mother Herta. I went on doing the things I had been doing before I was remarried. I restarted the classes I had begun before the interruption. Those poor girls who had been taking my class surely must have thought I would never resume them. I put out a call for all of the girls to meet me at my place the next evening after school. These girls were all smiles when I started the classes the first time, now they were jubilant.

The girls worked harder and longer to get the material.

In a few weeks I had the girls ready for a cotillion. They could dance any dance. They could ride side saddle without slipping off. They knew the correct way to set a table. They knew how to seat guests if there were dignitaries involved. They knew everything they needed to know as a lady of society.

I had the girls help me write the invitations to all of the people of society that lived anywhere close to Pine Grove. We invited some of the people who owned plantations in Kentucky and Virginia.

I posted the invitations and had planned for the cotillion to be the week before Earl and mother Herta would arrive home.

## Carolyn's Journal

Acceptance letters started coming in and I had the girls help me keep the 'acceptors' from the 'refusers'. We then had to make plans for putting them up while they were present. I asked Bob and Nancy. They would be happy to put some up. I asked John Campbell and he was glad to help. Everyone I asked to put people up were very glad to help out.

I had to get everything moved around in my house for the cotillion. I had to move the children's bedrooms to the back of the house. Erin and the triplets complained, but I had no choice. I told them that sometimes we all have to make a little sacrifice and are blessed for having done so.

It was too much for Erin and the triplets to understand, but they objected no further because they knew it wouldn't do them any good.

One day before the cotillion, I got a special delivery letter from Earl. Mother Herta was doing better than expected and they would be arriving sooner than they had thought. They would be arriving on the very night of the cotillion! This was just what I needed, more people to put up! I couldn't get a letter off to them asking them to stay at mother's a few days, so I just had to make arrangements for them here. I just needed a room for mother Herta. Earl would sleep with me. I fixed mother Herta a room.

Everything began to fall in place. I had everyone a place to stay. I had the living room set up as the Ballroom. I had gotten a three-piece orchestra for the occasion.

People began arriving from all over. I began to wonder if maybe I hadn't gone a little overboard this time! Everything was going well. There were no hitches or problems anywhere. It was a well thought out and planned event. The girls were complimenting themselves on what a great job we had done. That was when the plan began to fall apart.

I heard a knock at the door the morning of the cotillion and when I opened the door, there stood mother and father! They had come to spend the holidays with me! I had no room for them. What could I do?

Mother looked at me and asked, "We thought we would surprise you and Earl!"

"You certainly have, mother! We are having a cotillion for the girls I have trained and my house as well as all the houses are filled with guests! There is only one family who does not have anyone staying with them."

I sent one of the girls to George's home to see if mother and father could stay with them for a few days.

George came back with the girl and told my mother and father that he would be honored to have them. He needed advice from father anyway.

"I'm expecting you two to come to the cotillion along with George and Lena."

"I will have to see if I have anything fit to wear to a cotillion!" mother remarked. "I hadn't expected to attend a cotillion."

The evening of the cotillion arrived along with Earl and mother Herta. Earl looked at me and asked, "What in the world are you up to now?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I don't have time to explain now, just go put on your dancing clothes for the cotillion!"

"I'll be happy to if I can dance each dance with you!"

I looked at him and smiled as I said, "You know you have that, but I have another job for you. I need someone to introduce these young ladies as they come down the stairs to the cotillion."

"I'll need a list of their names!"

"Consider it done. Now scoot and get ready."

I had one of the girls show mother Herta to her room as I greeted the guests. The house was getting crowded with people, so some of the gentlemen stood out on the porch.

Earl came back to me with his Ball clothes on. It was his uniform for a Baron that he had to wear. I thought he looked dashing in it and apparently some of the other ladies thought so too for they were trying to get his attention!

I began the cotillion by having my young ladies come down the stairs as they were announced. I was at the top of the stairs seeing that they were all ready. The young men took the girls by the arm as they reached the bottom of the stairs and escorted them to the Ballroom.

The girls were all atwitter from nerves, but they did well. When they had all been announced and down the stairs, I heard a small familiar voice ask, "Aren't you going to announce me?"

I turned and looked and there was Erin all dressed in her Ball gown she wore in England. I caught Earl's eye and he announced Erin. When she went down the stairs a young boy about her age came up and escorted her to the Ballroom. I accused her of having this all planned when I talked to her later. She insisted that she hadn't, but to have a boy her own age show up at the right time looks suspicious to me!

The girls enjoyed the chance at high society and being among boys who wanted to court them. The cotillion came to an end and all the guests went to their lodgings for one more night and then return home.

I think mother and father enjoyed the cotillion and I know they enjoyed staying with George. He was a business man now and was asking for the advice of father. Father talked with George a lot and gave him advice on how to run a business such as his. Earl even got a chance to give George some advise.

After the cotillion and the guests had all returned home, I brought mother and father to my place. I had already gotten the children and governesses back in their rooms and they were all happy. I got mother Herta into another room so she had more room to unpack her things and spread out a little.

We were just one big happy family and rejoicing in what God had done for us!

The cotillion had been a success for some of the girls. They had boys of high society wanting to court them with strong indications of possible marriage. Erin had danced with several boys and men.

"I want to know who invited Pete?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"You did!"

"I surely didn't know it because you have never told me who Pete's parents are."

"I don't know, but you invited them and he came too."

Mother and father were staying with us for the holidays. Mother Herta was staying with us for how long I did not know. I was trying to keep house, do the cooking, be a mother to my twelve children and a host to all who would come by or needed help for some reason. During this time I was feeling quite tired. I guess it was from doing all the work I had to do.

One day I was getting dinner ready and mother was in the kitchen helping. For some reason I started to feel faint and went to sit in a chair when I passed out and fell to the floor with a thud. Mother heard the thud of me falling and looked and saw me on the floor! It frightened her! She called for Earl and father to come quick!

Earl came to the kitchen door, saw me on the floor passed out and instructed mother and father to not let me get up until he had returned with the doctor. "You make certain she lies on that floor until I get back!" Earl was really frightened for me. I came to in a few minutes and looked around and asked, "What happened?"

Mother looked at me and said, "You stay where you are! You passed out and Earl has gone for the doctor!"

"That's a bunch of foolishness! I'm all right now. Give me a hand so I can get up and finish dinner."

"Earl wants you to lie there until the doctor comes. He is worried about you and so am I! All of this work you have without any help. Maybe he will get you some help now!" said mother.

"He wanted to before, but I can't see paying someone to do what I am supposed to do. That is a waste of money as far as I am concerned."

"We'll let the Baron decide if he wants to waste his money or not when the doctor gives him his report."

"Mother, dinner will be late and everyone will be hungry and I'm lying here on the floor with nothing wrong with me!"

"Carolyn, you are going to lie there until the doctor comes if I have to sit on you!" mother commanded.

"I just hate for dinner to be late."

"I will finish dinner for you and father can watch over you until the doctor comes."

Mother began finishing dinner and walked over me and around me on the floor. I suggested to mother, "If I were somewhere else I wouldn't have to be walked around and over. I could at least be out of the way."

"You are not in the way. I can manage. You just stay put!"

Mother finished dinner and left it in the warmer until the doctor came.

In a while, Earl and the doctor arrived. The doctor looked at me on the floor and asked, "What happened this time?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I just felt faint and was going to sit in that chair when I passed out and fell to the floor. I'm all right now. Can't I get up and go about my business?"

"No ma'am! I want Earl and Richard to take you up to your room so I can examine you more thoroughly!"

"I don't need help doctor! I can walk up there on my own power."

"Not while I am here and before I examine you!"

The two men helped me up and with one under each arm they carried me up to my room. I felt like an idiot! I had traveled up and down those stairs thousands of times and I surely didn't need all that help now, but the doctor had ordered it and father and Earl were going to carry his orders out! Earl and father put me down gently on the bed and left the room. The doctor began examining me. He checked my heart. He checked my lungs. He checked my ribs to see if I might have broken one when I fell. He checked my legs to see if I could bend my legs. He bent my legs up and then had me push against his hand with my feet. Then he began to check my more intimate parts. He looked at me and asked, "You just recently were married again weren't you?"

"Yes, I was. That is when I married Earl."

"I should have known without doing all this exam. You are with child again!"

"Thank-you doctor. Now may I get up?"

"You cannot get up! You are to stay in bed until I see you again and tell you, you can. Do you understand?"

"Who will cook and keep house for my family? I can't lay around. My family needs me!"

"They will need you worse if you are dead! I don't want you doing anything! Do you hear me? - nothing! Earl can hire some people to do your work. Perhaps some of your Indians or friends in Pine Grove can help. You are to do nothing. You are all run down from all that you have been doing. You need rest and I expect you to get it, starting now!"

He gave me a sedative and then went to the door to tell the rest of them his instructions. I could hear Earl when he told him I was with child by him. He was elated!

"That is wonderful news! I'll get her servants tomorrow. Tonight Hilda and my mother will get things done and take care of her. She won't have to lift a finger."

"You just make certain of that. I have given her a sedative now and she will be asleep before long. You people do things as near to the way she does as possible so she won't feel she has to get up to do it right."

"I'll probably be calling on you often!"

"You feel free to do just that."

The doctor left and Earl came into the room and told me he was hiring servants to take care of everything so I wouldn't have to worry about the house. I think that is what he said because the sedative was taking effect and I was half asleep by then. I never heard anything the rest of the night. That doctor had put me out until morning. I started to get out of bed the next morning and get

## Carolyn's Journal

dressed for the day when I felt a big hand grab me and hold me in bed. It was Earl!

"Just where do you think you are going?"

"I was just getting up to put my clothes on for the day!"

"You weren't planning to get breakfast were you?"

"The thought had crossed my mind."

"You don't have to. Mother and Hilda are hard at it now. They will bring us a tray with breakfast in a while."

"Honey! There isn't anything wrong with me! I can walk down to the breakfast table surely!"

"Not this morning. You and I are going to have breakfast in bed."

"We will be real snobs this morning. We won't even eat with the children." I hadn't thought about the children until then. I asked, "Who is taking care of the children?"

"The governesses with the help of mother, Hilda, Richard and me. They are fine."

"I'll bet they are! The last time you spoiled them so bad they wanted to do away with me!"

"Not this time. They are doing just as you would have them do. That was part of the doctor's orders."

"Will I ever have a chance to see them again?"

"Certainly! Mother is going to bring them in a few at a time so you can see them after breakfast."

"That will help. Aren't you even going to let me get my dress on and sit up in the rocker to see them?"

"You can right after breakfast in bed."

Mother came in with a tray that had breakfast on it. She looked at me and said, "You eat good. You gave us all a bad scare last night. Build your strength up and do as the doctor says."

"Don't worry, mother! I'll be all right. I just passed out from doing all I had been doing. I'll be fine in a couple of days."

"I'm not taking any chances with her, Hilda. I lost Aggy and her baby. This is not going to happen if I can help it this time!"

"I'm glad to hear you say that. I know you mean it."

I ate my breakfast. After breakfast, I asked Earl, "May I get up now and get some clothes on? I can't let the children see me in my nightgown after breakfast! The first thing they will be wanting to have their breakfast in bed and to lie around in their nightgowns and nightshirts!"

"You can get up and get your clothes on, but you come right back here and sit in the rocker while the children come in to see you," commanded Earl.

"I'll take the tray down and get the children washed and ready to come to see you," mother said.

"I better get up before the children start in."

"I just want you to know that you scared me silly last night."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Are you going to let me up now?"

"No way! You are going to follow the doctor's orders."

"That old sawbones has been wrong about me more than he has been right. He told me I was going to have twins one time and I had triplets!"

"I choose to believe him this time, so all your pleading is to no avail."

Mother Herta came with the children. She opened the door and checked to see if I were ready for them. When she saw I was, she let Erin in first.

Erin came over to the rocker where I was and said, "I'm sorry you are sick mother. I hope I didn't make you sick."

"No Erin, you didn't make me sick. I have just been doing too much. I'll be all right in a few days. Now don't you feel you caused this because you didn't. You be a good girl and mind your governess, mother Herta and mother."

"I will mother. I want you to get well soon. I'll be praying for you in my prayers."

"Thank-you Erin. I need your prayers just now."

"I better go now, mother so you can see the rest of the children." With that Erin went out the door and the triplets came in.

"Are you feeling better, mother?" asked Joseph.

"I'm feeling much better. I'll be well before you know it."

"Are you going to be able to get out of your room soon?" Richard wanted to know.

"I surely do hope so. I can't stand to be shut up in a room for long."

"I hope you do, mother. I miss you" commented Robert.

"I miss all of you too. Now you be good and mind your governess and grandmothers so I won't have to worry about you."

They went out and each set of children came in together. They were all worried about their mother because they had never seen me sick and in bed before. I had always been the one helping them. Now they wanted to help me. I couldn't help but feel proud of my little family!

After all of the children and governesses had come in to see me, Earl took me by the hands and lifted me from the rocker and headed me back to bed. "You get some rest now. I've got to get some servants. As you see, we are trying hard not to spoil the children. Now you rest."

"I can't rest. It's daylight and I should be doing something!"

Mother Herta hadn't left the room so when she heard me say that I should be doing something, she said, "You just take it easy. Everything is going along fine except you and you need rest. I'll pull the drapes so it will be darker and you can rest easier."

"I can't rest when I know what I should be doing."

"All you have to do is tell us and we will see that it gets done. Earl and I want you to take it easy and do as the doctor says. We lost one wife and a baby because we were careless. We are not going to be that way with you. We love you too much!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Mother Herta, I doubt that there was anything you could have done differently."

"That may be so, but we are taking no chances with you. I better go so you can get some rest. If we have a problem we can't solve, one of us will seek your help."

She left the room. I could see that she means well, but these unborn babies are going to mean a lot more to her than the other children. I am going to have to watch and squash that problem the first time I see it.

Earl got servants in Kentucky. One of the plantation owners let him have some of his Negroes. When Earl came back with them, I told him that I didn't believe in slavery and wouldn't have it around me. Either he pay these Negroes as he would any hired help or I would do what I could to abort his babies.

He looked at me shocked and said, "First of all, you surely wouldn't try to abort my babies! Secondly, I am paying them as I do other help. They will make a salary as well as have a place to stay."

"Where are they going to stay? In the attic like John puts them up?"

"There are some cabins open at the furnace. Bob said they could live there and work here as long as he doesn't need the cabins or until we get them different quarters."

"That is really nice of Bob. What is he going to do if he should happen to need those cabins?"

"He says he has all the workers he needs and doesn't intend to hire more."

"It looks like you lucked out there. Now tell me about these Negroes. Are they related to one another or are they all from different families?"

"The cook and the butler are man and wife and the maid and stableboy are married. I intend to give them papers showing they are free men as soon as I can get them."

"Now that makes me feel better. You didn't do so bad after all. I'm sorry I jumped on you like I did. Come over here so I can kiss you and make up."

He came over to me and I gave him a big hug and a kiss. He looked at me and said, "Now you see what happens when you jump to conclusions!"

"I see, dear. I did that same thing years ago didn't I? It changed the course of both our lives."

"I'm letting bygones be bygones. Let's dwell on the present and make certain we don't make mistakes now."

The doctor came by to see me. He looked at me and said, "It looks like you are doing much better. You can get up and go about the house, but you are to do nothing that even looks like work."

"Nothing?"

"Nothing! I don't believe the help, your mother, Earl or his mother are going to let you. Knowing you, I expect you will try, even if you have to be a little sneaky about it."

"Thank you for your confidence in me!"

## Carolyn's Journal

He laughed and left the room. I got up from the bed, opened the door and walked out into the other part of the house. It felt good to get out of my bedroom. I walked to the nursery to see the children. They were all happy to see me. Mother Herta was with the children and wanted to know if I was supposed to be up and about.

"The doctor came and told me I can get up so I have. He told me I couldn't do any work. I came to see my children and I am doing nothing."

"That is all right if the doctor told you, you could get up. I just don't want you doing something you shouldn't."

"I'm sorry, but everyone acts like I need a guard. Am I a prisoner in my own home?"

"No dear. We just don't want you to pass out again."

I noticed Erin sitting by herself and she looked like she had been crying. This was unusual for Erin. She was usually happy! I walked over to her and asked, "Why are you crying, Erin?"

She looked up at me. "Mother, I am so happy to see you out of bed. I know that you probably got sick because of the way I acted about Pete. I'm sorry mother and I have been praying for you."

"Honey, I want you to forget what you and I said about Pete. That wasn't what made me sick. You are going to have two more brothers or sisters or one of each. That is what made me sick. Not you!"

"Do you really mean I didn't make you sick?"

"No honey, you didn't make me sick. You usually make me happy." Erin came to me and gave me a big hug around the neck. She was smiling now and her happy self again.

Mother Herta left the room and went straight to Earl. Earl came in. He looked at me, "What are you doing in here?"

"Didn't the doctor tell you that I can get up and walk around, but I am not to do anything?"

"He didn't tell me that. Are you sure you are not pulling one on me?"

"No dear, and it feels good to get out of that room and be able to go about the house."

"If the doctor said you could walk about the house and do no work, I guess it is all right, but if you feel weak or tired, get back in bed. If you pass out again, I'm going to put you in bed for the rest of the nine months!"

"I don't think that will happen now that I can't work. I suppose now you will have a pudgy wife. I hope you don't mind me getting fat!"

"Do you think that if we took a walk together each night that might help?"

"That sounds good to me. When do we start?"

"How about tomorrow evening after dinner?"

"That will be fine with me."

I left the nursery after seeing my children. They were all happy I was up and around. I went to the living room. Someone had moved a chair from where I usually keep it and so I started to move it back. I had Earl, mother Herta, father,

## Carolyn's Journal

mother and a person that must have been the maid all jump up to move the chair where I wanted it. They all looked at me and said, "You are to do NO work!"

I went over and sat on the couch facing the fireplace and asked mother if she would please play the harp for me.

"Of course! Anything in particular?"

"Anything you want to play, mother. I just want to hear something besides voices telling me not to work."

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Sixteen HIRED HELP

The next morning I got up and dressed for the day. This time no big hand grabbed me and dragged me back to bed! I went by the nursery to see how the children were and then went to the kitchen. When I went into the kitchen, I discovered a disaster area! Cupboard doors were hanging open with dishes stuffed in any old way. The counter tops were covered with debris of various kinds. The stove top was covered with burned spills. The floor was dirty and covered with spills. My kitchen was a total and complete wreck!

I was tempted to sit down and cry. I always prided myself on how well I kept my kitchen. Now it was a good example of how not to keep a kitchen!

I looked at Liza and asked, "You worked in a kitchen for your former master?"

"Yas'um ah did."

"Just what did you do in the kitchen?"

"Ah did dishes."

"You didn't do any cooking?"

"No'um! Ah did dishes. 'Nuther girl put 'em away! All ah did was dishes."

"Why did you say you could cook and hired on here as a cook?"

"Mr. Bodine jes' married Rufas an' me. He war hopin' we'd have chillin's so's he cud have mo' slaves later. We'uns din't want thet, so I tol' Mr. Earl I cud cook. Ah hada get away from tha Bodines! Is you all goin'ta whup me fer thet?"

"No, Liza. We don't whip anyone. I am going to teach you how to work in the kitchen. You are not slaves here. You are hired help! We are paying you a salary. That money will be yours to use as you want!"

"Mr. Bodine wouda' put thu lash ta me fer thet!"

"Just forget Mr. Bodine. You aren't his anymore. You are our hired help and we don't whip anyone! We try to show you how to do better and I'm starting with you in the kitchen!"

I showed Liza how to stack pots, pans and bowls so they will go into the cupboard nicely. I showed her how things should be kept handy so she wouldn't have to search for them when she needed them. I showed her how to clean the kitchen and how to keep it clean. I was really proud of myself because I had gotten my kitchen back in order and hadn't lifted a finger!

It was time for breakfast and I showed Liza how to make fluffy pancakes. My specialty!

Earl heard me in the kitchen and came to see what was going on. "Are you trying to sneak one on us?"

"Don' ya all fuss at her! She ain't doin' nuttin'. I bin doin' all tha wuk heah. She bin real nice ta me."

"Well! Excuse me, Liza! I'm glad you have not let her work." With that, Earl took me by the hand and led me back to the dining room. I went, but not until I

## Carolyn's Journal

had made a sign to Liza thanking her for speaking up for me. She smiled back at me as she fried pancakes.

In a few minutes she brought the pancakes to the table. They looked great. I couldn't have done better myself!

After breakfast I got Earl cornered and told him that I had gone into the kitchen earlier and it was a mess.

"It wasn't a mess when I went in just now!"

"That is because I had a talk with Liza and found out she couldn't cook. All she has ever done in the kitchen is the dishes. Another girl even put the dishes away! She didn't know how to put the dishes away. She is only sixteen - she reckons - and Bodine got her married off to Rufus so she would have babies that he could make slaves of later! She lied to you so she could get away from him. He must have been terrible to his people!"

"I got her because I was told if I could get a Negro to do the cooking, they would be the best I could get! You really didn't lift anything or do any work in the kitchen?"

"No, I didn't! I was proud to get things all straightened out in the kitchen without doing a thing!"

"I'll bet if you go back in there now, she will have things messed up again."

"Let's go back into the kitchen and check now. We will just see!"

We went back into the kitchen. Liza was just finishing the dishes when we walked in. The cupboard doors were all closed. The stove was clean. Liza was just getting to the counter tops, so they weren't clean yet and the floor hadn't been swept.

I said, "Everything is looking great, Liza! I'll be back about eleven to help you with lunch."

"Ya all mean ah don' hafta wuk somer' else?"

"No, Liza. Cooking is your job. You do the cooking and keeping the kitchen clean. That is all!"

"Mr. Bodine had me wuk in da fields when ah was dun in tha kitchen."

"Not here Liza! When you get all cleaned up here, you can go to your cabin or where ever you want!"

"Thank ya all, Miss Care'lin. Ah's beginnin' ta luv ya all a whole lot! May I hug ya?"

"Of course!"

She came over and gave me a big hug and gave Earl a big hug. This was apparently the first time any white people had ever treated her decent. She finished cleaning the kitchen and then went out the back door. She kept watching to see if we were going to come get her or call her back. She just couldn't quite get the idea that she was free to go home and rest or to do whatever she wanted.

At eleven I went into the kitchen and there was Liza already there waiting for me to tell her what to do. I told her what to get for lunch. She got it and with my advice, she did a masterful job! I complimented her and she said, "No 'un ever tol' me how good ah did afor'."

## Carolyn's Journal

"We tell people here when they do good. We give them help when they don't - not a whipping!"

"Ah luvs ya more and more, Miss Care'lin. Ya all gotta be tha nicest people 'round!"

"Thank you, Liza, but I expect you may be prejudiced!"

"Ah ain't lyin'! Ah's tellin' tha truf!"

"I know you are, Liza. Prejudiced means you are a little one sided in your opinion because you work for me. It doesn't mean you are lying!"

"What ever. In ma way o' thinking ya all's tha best."

"Let's get lunch on the table and see if anyone eats it!"

"Ah'I bet them younguns o' yourn 'ill eat it!"

"I know you are right there."

I went into the dinning room and sat at my place while Liza brought in the meal. It really did look good. The children loved it along with Earl. Liza was learning to cook and season things which is very important to good cooking.

Father loved lunch. He said, "I can hardly wait to see what we are going to have for dinner!"

"I agree, father! That was excellent, Liza" added mother.

"That was excellent! You didn't sneak into the kitchen and get that for her, did you Carolyn?" Mother Herta asked.

"No, mother Herta. All I did was tell her how. She did the whole thing by herself."

"She certainly did well at following instructions!" remarked Earl.

Liza had been listening at the swinging door that separated the kitchen from the dinning room. These remarks made her feel good.

After lunch I went into the kitchen and Liza was all smiles! "When you finish all the dishes and cleaning up here in the kitchen, you can go to your cabin and not worry about dinner until about four. I guess by now you can see the importance of keeping the kitchen organized and clean. You spend less time in the kitchen and more time on your own."

"Yas 'um. Rufus an' I has begun tryin' ta start a fam'bly now."

"That is wonderful! I wish you luck!"

"Ah's so happy! Ah ain't niver been happy afore."

I worked with Liza until I could see that she was capable of carrying on in the kitchen without me. She was learning to do a lot of cooking and baking. She was turning into a gourmet cook! I was quite proud of my pupil.

Liza would give Rufus a grocery list of things she needed at the store and Rufus would go for it. One day a slave hunter was in the store and stopped Rufus and wanted to know where he worked and who his master was.

Rufus pointed to the house and said, "There."

The store keeper saw this and said, "That is right! He works for Miss Carolyn and if you have anything to ask about it, I suggest you go to the house and ask her."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I just may do that! She may be harboring fugitives. I just may have me a look see while I am here."

"I don't think I would get too smart with the Baron. The last one that did came out feet first!" commented the store keeper.

"I'll just see about that!"

The slave hunter went straight up to my place and started poking around in the yard and peeping in the windows. Earl came out with his gun and asked, "What are you doing around my place peeping in windows and poking around in my yard?"

The hunter saw the gun and said, "I am looking for run away slaves."

"I don't have any here. You better not be looking in my windows again or I will shoot first and ask question later!"

"You wouldn't shoot me!"

"If you don't head down that drive and leave now. I will!" With this he placed a shot in the ground in front of the hunter! The hunter took off like a scared rabbit!

Earl came back into the house mumbling to himself. "He better not come back here peeping in my windows again or I will shoot him!"

I walked over to him and said, "Honey! Calm down! He probably won't be back. He certainly took off when you let him see you meant business!"

"The trouble is that he will probably go to the sheriff and get a paper giving him the right to search the house. He is a trouble maker! I should have killed him when I had the chance!"

"Those are pretty strong words! I doubt that he can get a search warrant. The sheriff knows us and he will probably pay no attention to the fellow."

That settled that incident. Earl didn't like people looking into his windows.

Some people in the community thought that we had rented slaves from someone in Kentucky. When they saw that our Negroes were free to come and go as they pleased, they soon changed their minds.

When the Constitution of Ohio was adopted, slavery in Ohio was forbidden. This had passed by one vote. There were people in southern Ohio who believed in slavery. To circumvent the law, they would rent slaves from a slave owner in Kentucky or Virginia. I did not like the practice and let some of those people know how I felt about it.

By Thanksgiving time, Liza could do wonders in the kitchen without my help. I explained to Liza that Thanksgiving was a big meal so my mother and mother Herta would give her a hand in the kitchen. Liza had a hard time getting used to the fact that white people would work beside her and help get a big meal! This was totally strange to her.

When the Thanksgiving meal was over, mother and mother Herta helped Liza with the dishes. When everything was all cleared up in the kitchen, Liza gave mother and mother Herta a big hug. Mother and mother Herta didn't understand what that was all about, so I explained it to them.

## Carolyn's Journal

We invited Bob and Nancy to join us for Christmas as usual. This was the time when men get together to talk and the ladies get together to gossip a little. Most of the gossiping was done in the kitchen, so we invited Liza to join in with us. Liza was surprised that she had been asked to join in.

Bob got to telling father that there was now in operation furnaces called Etna, Buckhorn, Hecla, Vesuvius, Lawrence and soon Center and La Grange.

Father asked, "Doesn't Pine Grove cast molds instead of pig iron?"

"Yes, we do. We pour castings during the week and on Sundays we pour pig iron. We have the distinction of casting the first coal burning stove in this area. We have trouble keeping enough stove parts cast for the market. The iron we make here is just right for those coal burning stoves."

Earl asked, "Let me get this straight. This furnace casts mostly stove parts. What do the other furnaces pour?"

"Most of the other furnaces pour pig iron and sell it to the foundries for further processing. They sell to foundries in Cincinnati, Pittsburgh or St. Louis. Some furnaces are getting calls for railroad car wheels. With the railroad a coming thing, the iron industry never looked better!" Bob pointed out to Earl and father.

"I don't believe in working on Sunday. At present we have to keep the furnaces going, but if I can find a way to close down the furnace on Sunday and not jeopardize the working of the furnace I will do it. I believe that if God gave us the material and brains to make iron, then we should surely not break one of his expressed commands."

"That would be good if you could because I believe you would attract a higher class of workers and less trouble." Remarked Earl.

"We are getting requests for more cast pots and pans for people who are moving on west. There is a big need for iron to go on the new wagons being made to travel west. The demand for iron and steel is growing all the time. Our problem here is that we are going to have to make furnaces that will produce more iron faster and cheaper. They are already working on burning coal to produce iron at the Lawrence furnace. It seems to have some drawbacks, but I'm sure that it will be worked out sometime in the near future. Charcoal iron has been the best up to now. Furnace men in Pennsylvania are working on the best way to make steel from iron now. If they get that perfected and the ability to make more iron cheaply, these furnaces will probably have to close down", prophesied Bob.

"That sounds like these furnaces are not going to be operating much longer, Bob. Is that what you are saying?" Father requested.

"I don't mean to sound so dismal. I think it will be years before we will have to close these furnaces. We may not even see it in our lifetime!"

"That is good! Carolyn and I will have no reason for having to move from here because the furnaces closed down!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I don't think you will have to worry about that. The people of Pine Grove wouldn't let you folks go. These people love her for all the things that she does for them." Mentioned Bob.

"Christmas dinner is ready when you folks are!"

"We will wash our hands and be right there. You can tell Liza to get it on the table."

"It's already on the table! All you have to do is come and sit at the table. I'll get the children and governesses while you wash your hands."

I went to get the children and the men folk went to the back porch to wash their hands.

We all returned to the table and Earl asked Bob to say Grace. Bob gave a longer grace than Earl usually does and when I heard some dish noises, I looked up. The children had started digging in while grace was still being said! I stopped that. The children were apparently hungry!

We began passing the food and the governesses dipped food for their six children. They gave each a small serving of everything they wanted. When everything had been passed, the children as well as the adults had heaping plates. How those little stomachs were going to handle all that food, I didn't know. I could see that I was going to have trouble with mine! My eyes were apparently bigger than my stomach! We still had dessert to go after the meal!

We decided to leave the dessert for later. Liza's pumpkin pie, mother's apple cobbler and my mincemeat pie had all sounded and smelled so good before dinner and now they were almost nauseating to think about.

Later that evening when Earl and I were getting ready for bed, I told him that Liza had opened up in the kitchen as the ladies were talking and told of the rotten things the Bodine boys had done to her. It seemed that they thought that they owned her and not their father. They had whipped her just for the fun of it. They had forced her when she was only twelve. That was all four of them, not just one! They just simply treated her as an animal! Their father had sold Liza several times, but the boys would always go to the new owner and tell him that their dad had no right to sell her and that they were taking her back! Being four strong boys they brought her back and mistreated her more!

"Why in the world didn't the father stop this?"

"He couldn't or wouldn't. I think the boys had him scared of them."

"I believe that if I had a boy or boys that acted like that, I would tie them to a stake and put the lash to them until they behaved!"

"I guess their father feels powerless."

"I feel sorry for Liza now. I had no idea that she had been treated so rotten!"

"I had an idea from what she had said before, but I had no idea it was that bad."

"You really know how to get me all upset so I can't sleep don't you? What if those ruffians came here for her? They could do a lot of damage before they left! I'm glad that I am here most of the time!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"They aren't likely to cross the Ohio to get Liza back and besides, you are the best shot around!"

"I would have to have my own gun and a chance to use it."

"Let's not worry about that and go to sleep now."

We went to sleep. "I noticed that Earl was sleeping restlessly so I gave him a big hug and a kiss to try and comfort him. Little did I know the things the Lord had for me to deal with the next day!"

I got up as usual in the morning to go to the kitchen and supervise Liza in the kitchen. She really didn't need me, but it did become a habit and I just got up as she did.

I heard a noise at the front door and went to the Parlor with a lamp in my hand to see what was going on. There were four drunken young men out there trying to get in. I yelled for Earl just as one kicked the front door in and grabbed me. One of them said, "We have come for Liza. My father didn't have the right to sell her!"

Their breath smelled bad enough to puke a bulldog off of a gut wagon!

"You must be the Bodine boys!"

"That's us. Where ya'all got Liza?"

"You aren't going to get her! You people don't deserve a pig much less a slave!"

"Ya' all hear that, Jeb? She ain't going to let us have our property!" They all laughed and snickered.

"She isn't your property! She is ours! We bought and paid for her! If you have a complaint, register it with your father!"

"Can't you do something to shut her up, Tad? I'm going to the kitchen to get Liza. She told them she was a cook."

"Why don't we take this big mouth bitch outside and teach her what it's like to be with a MAN for a change?"

"Good idea! We will all four have her and when we get through she will wonder why she married that guy she is married to!"

"I doubt that! There isn't a man among you! There certainly aren't any southern gentlemen among you."

"There are some in the south meaner than we are!"

"Well, you four certainly aren't gentlemen!"

These brothers were all dressed in typical southern riding habits. Just to look at them dressed like gentlemen made me sick! They were acting more like animals than human beings. Their slaves were no doubt more civilized than they were!

They dragged me out of the house. I was kicking and screaming and making all the noise I could. I had a happy thought about the animals saving me and then I looked about. The forests were all cut, so the larger animals were all gone. I looked around and all I could see was a rabbit. I yelled to the rabbit, "Get me some help quick!" The rabbit went hopping off. "If you think a rabbit is going

## Carolyn's Journal

to help you, you better think again! All they could do would be to kick me with their little feet and tickle me!"

"You'll laugh when you are on the ground writhing in agony and dying!"

"From a rabbit?"

"You'll know when it happens!"

He threw me to the ground and the other boy held me down while the first one proceeded to get ready for me. Then he lay down beside me. I was beginning to think of what an ugly piece of humanity was going to force me and my animals were not going to be able to protect me. Just then a quick flash of something hit him and he rolled over on the ground groaning and moaning. The other boy let me go and went over to see what had happened to his brother. Quick as a flash a copperhead had struck his brother in the neck and was now ready to strike the other boy as he leaned down. I got up and adjusted my clothes.

The first boy looked at me as he lay in agony and said, "I didn't think you could do that!"

Within seconds they were both dead.

Earl had heard the noise when they took me out the front door and had gotten his gun and gone to a front room upstairs. He looked out the window and decided he would go to another room where he would have a better view of the boys. One of the boys heard him upstairs, so he went up there to see if he could surprise Earl. The door to the room Earl had chosen to go in had a squeaky hinge. I had been after Earl to oil that hinge, but he had neglected to tend to it.

Earl was sitting in a chair in front of the window waiting for a clear shot at the boys in front. He heard the door squeak and he turned to face the intruder. He saw that it was a stranger so he fired and killed him on the spot! Praise the Lord for that squeaky hinge! I won't let Earl oil that hinge now!

Earl went back to the window and the last Bodine boy was coming out the door dragging Liza with him. When he saw his brothers on the ground, he let Liza go and came running to see what was wrong with his brothers. Earl took aim in the window and shot the Bodine boy in the head!

I was leaning against a tree in the yard with two Bodine boys dead at my feet and another one farther away.

Meanwhile Earl and father carried the one dead Bodine from the house and tossed him on top of the pile of dead Bodines. He then asked the maid to clean up the mess in the house.

Earl sent the stableboy, Demetrius, on horseback to fetch the sheriff and sent Rufus to fetch the doctor. Once he did these things, he came to see how I was.

"You don't suppose it will do something to the babies?"

"I don't think so, but we need to have the doctor take a look."

In a short while the sheriff came and looked at the pile of Bodines in front of the house. He looked at each one and then he came into the house. The sheriff

## Carolyn's Journal

called Earl to the parlor and began to talk with him and question what had taken place.

Earl wasn't certain of the first part, but he told what he knew of the event. The sheriff listened and then said, "You shot two of them. One in the house upstairs and one outside. How did the other two die?"

"I have no idea sheriff! I only shot two. You can check my guns. I only have the two shots - one in each gun. After that I have to either reload or throw the guns at them!"

The sheriff laughed and suggested, "Perhaps Carolyn knows what happened to them."

"She may sheriff, but I want her left alone until the doctor has examined her."

"If you have sent for the doctor, I'll wait, but if you haven't, I'll have to ask Carolyn."

"We have sent for the doctor and he should be here soon."

Before long Rufus returned with the doctor. The doctor asked Liza to sit in a chair outside my room with the others. He examined me. He poked and felt around and listened until he was satisfied. It made me feel like a piece of meat someone was buying in the butcher shop!

He finally spoke, "I don't think there will be any trouble from this." He left the room and took Liza into another bedroom and checked her. He discovered that Liza was with child!

When Rufus heard this he jumped up and down and was so excited that he couldn't control himself. The doctor asked Rufus, "Do I need to give you a sedative?"

"No suh, Ah's all right. Jes happy!"

The doctor gave Liza a sedative to take and told her to go home and take it. It put her out most of the day, so she couldn't work for us. Mother and mother Herta said that they didn't mind cooking for her today.

I had gotten out of bed and had come to the door of my room when I heard Rufus making all the noise. The doctor looked at me and snapped, "You get back into that bed! You are going to be sleeping most of the day also!"

He gave me a sedative and I reluctantly crawled back into bed.

"Doctor, will you tell me something?"

"I will if I can."

"Why is it that every time you see me, you want me in bed?"

"You need your rest, Carolyn! You don't realize how run down you get! You scared the be-jabbers out of me when you were having babies almost every year. That would have killed a normal woman!"

"I guess I'm not normal then! It didn't kill me!"

"No, but it came close. By the way, how did you keep that Bodine from forcing you when he was so close to doing it?"

"That was close, but my animals saved me."

"You mean that copperhead is one of your animals?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"He is now more than ever. If you knew, why did you ask?"

"Just checking!"

The doctor left and the sheriff came in to ask me questions. I told him what I knew. He thanked me and left. That was the last I knew until the next morning.

Everything was all cleaned up and the bodies of the Bodine boys were gone. Those boys were all large. They must have been close to six feet tall and must have weighed close to three hundred pounds. All of those pounds were not fat! They were strong. Just the size of them would put fear into the heart of a smaller person! They even looked mean!

In two days their father came to claim the bodies. He wasn't angry with anyone. He appeared happy to have them dead! They apparently had beaten him senseless one time when he crossed them. They all four worked together. They never worked alone because one of them might get beaten. They were like all bullies - yellow to the core!

The first of February, I was notified by the twins that they were ready for this big world. I had made a birthing bed beside our bed and Earl, father and the triplets had made and carved cradles for them. They were hand carved on the head board and the footboard.

The twins were born, one boy and one girl. Earl and I decided to name the boy after his father and the girl for Gramma. They were Karl and Inga. They were both gray eyed like their father with blond hair.

I looked at them and told Earl, "Anyone can tell they had a different father!"

Earl laughed, "They are both normal and healthy aren't they?"

"Oh, yes! They even have your appetite!" I laughed as I said this.

Earl laughed also. He had been so afraid that something might happen to them and he was concerned for me. I wonder, sometimes, what he would have done if he had been forced to choose whether the doctor would save me or the twins! I praise God that he didn't have to make that decision! I would have hated to have made that decision.

"I assume now that the babies are born, you are going to let me resume my regular routine."

"That all depends on what the doctor says!"

"That doctor will not be around again until the twins have long gray beards!"

"Carolyn! You know better than that!" exclaimed Earl.

"If he runs true to form, he will be here in about two months. I suggest that if everything is all right in a week, that she is allowed to do as she wants," mother suggested.

"That sounds logical! I'll agree to that" remarked Earl.

In a week everything was all right, so I got up and started doing as I usually do. The only thing was Liza wouldn't let me help in the kitchen. She said that was her job. I could watch if I wanted to, but not work. Of course Liza wanted to know all about what to expect being in her condition. I tried to help her as much as I could when she would let me in the kitchen to talk to her.

## Carolyn's Journal

The door knocker sounded and I ran to answer the door. Rufus told me that was his job. I was not to do that!

A chair was out of place in the living room and I started to move it. The maid let me know that she was being paid to do that. All I had to do was tell her how I wanted it and she would do it.

I went to the stable to see and pet Princess, the horse the Indians gave me. Princess had some cockle burrs in her mane, so I got a curry comb and began to comb the burrs out. Demetrius came running up and took the comb out of my hand and said that was his job.

I went to the remains of the garden and sat on a swing we had there in a grape arbor. The animals began coming up to be petted and scratched. I petted them and scratched some between the ears. I remarked to them, "I'm glad that no one else can do this or it would be their job!"

Ruth Ann came up to me as I sat there. She watched me and then said, "Mother, you have had a hard time of late haven't you?"

"Yes, Ruth Ann, I have. Would you like to pet this rabbit? He will let you as long as you are near me." I gave her the rabbit and she petted it and scratched it between the ears.

"I never did this before, mother! This is great fun! I didn't know you could do this!"

"I have been able to do this ever since I can remember. I always thought that everyone could do it. Mother told me different one day. It is fun isn't it?"

"It certainly is fun. I'd like to do it again sometime!"

"I guess that you will get a chance, because it seems that this is all I'm allowed to do anymore!"

"Don't be hard on the others for doing their job! That should just open up new territory for you to go to work in!"

"What was that last statement you just made? Please repeat it."

"I said that by not having to do the housework, it should open up new territory for you to work in."

"Ruth Ann you have solved my problem! Now can I help you in some way?"

"You remember James - the one who would go anywhere to have the right to court me?"

"Yes, I seem to remember that!"

"Well, he hasn't shown up as promised. He hasn't even written to me. Do I forget him or keep on hoping?"

"I would give it a little more time. I know that you love him very much. Perhaps something has prevented him from coming. I'd give him two more weeks before I scratched him off the list."

"Thank you, mother! You are the best and ever so wise!"

"Of course I realize that you are prejudiced!" I laughed. It was the first time I had a chance to laugh in a long time!

I went back into the house with Ruth Ann and found Earl. "I taught classes before I married you and after that. You were in the cotillion I had for the last

## Carolyn's Journal

class. There are a few girls who wanted to go through the last class, but I just didn't have room for them. I want to teach them and then I will change the classes to practical classes for the home."

"That sounds good to me! By the way, Reverend Young came by to see you and I couldn't find you, so he left. He said he was in a hurry and would see you in church on Sunday."

"I am sorry I missed him. I was just outside!"

Sunday came and I got ready for church and to sing if I were asked. I got all of the little ones who sang with me, ready also. I was all set if the pastor asked me to sing as he usually did.

Sunday morning I got the children all taken care of with the help of the governesses and made Earl, mother, father, and mother Herta come with me. This was one time I told them what they were going to do! It felt good!

When I got to church, everyone was glad to see me back in church. With all the group with me we nearly filled the church by ourselves. I laughed to myself.

Church began and Reverend Young came out to the pulpit. He looked very solemn for some reason. Before his message he announced that the singing O'Deigh's would sing. I figured he would do that, so I had prepared ahead of time.

I got up to sing and got my troops in position so they could sing also. We sang one hymn and the congregation loved it! We sang a second song and I had everyone join in on the singing. The congregation enjoyed that. That is everyone enjoyed it that was there. For some reason the church was down in numbers. I couldn't account for it except that perhaps they had been coming to hear me sing and when I couldn't come, they stayed home also. If that is so, it makes me feel bad because they should have been coming to hear the word of God expounded.

After the service was over, I caught pastor Young and asked him why he had dropped by the house. He told me, "The church for about a year now has been in a steady decline. Many who were coming are not coming now. I'm not sure of the reason. The Elders met with me the other night and suggested that my usefulness here has been concluded and that I should consider moving to another church! I told them that I would think about it! I want to talk with you sometime soon and see what you think about some of the ideas I have. Meanwhile, pray that God will show me what he wants me to do!"

"I want to talk with you about some things I have in mind also. With all these servants Earl has at the house, I'm not allowed to do anything, so I can put more effort into other things now!"

"I'll be over in a few days to see you. You don't plan to be somewhere else do you?"

"I should be around. I have two new babies to feed and take care of now."

As we sat at lunch, mother Herta spoke, "I've got to get back to England. I have never been away this long before."

"You didn't tell me you were planning to go back, mother Herta! Aren't you feeling well?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Everything is all right. I just want to go home for a while. I miss the heather around the house in England and the many beautiful flowers in the spring in Prussia."

"That is good, mother. You can get things all fixed up over there and maybe we will come to see you this summer!" Earl commented.

"We need to get back to Boston. We have been away quite a while. Some of those people working for me may find out they don't need me!" commented father laughing.

"I guess that if he leaves, I should go also. I have a tour planned for this summer. I'm trying to get Suzie to come with me. She is really a good harpist!"

"She may be with child by now and won't be able to go!" I suggested.

"Mother, what would you or people think if the Singing O'Deigh's accompanied you on part of your tour?"

"If Suzie can't go, that may be a possibility. I'll have to think about it!"

"Just don't do like Reverend Young and let me know at the time we are to sing!"

"I think that would be fun, mother! We would get to sing to royalty!" remarked Erin.

"You'll have to do better than you did today! You were flat! Get with it sis!" remarked Joseph.

"Yeah, sis! Get your mind off Pete and you can sing better!" teased Robert.

"Getting her mind off Pete isn't going to help her! She is beyond hope!" teased Richard.

"That will be enough of that. We need to be happy," remarked Earl.

"That is right! All of our grandmothers and grandfather are leaving! We have to be joyful, so they will want to return!" put in little Herta.

"I agree with that. We do want to see the castle some more and if we are ugly, grandmother may not want us to ever come see her again!" commented little Hilda.

"You folks don't have to worry about me not wanting to see you! You are my medicine! You made me well!" replied mother Herta.

"How soon are you going to have to leave, mother?" questioned Earl.

"I thought about leaving in the morning if you would take me to Boston on the yacht!"

"That would be a good idea! I could take Hilda and Richard with us if they are ready to leave" replied Earl.

"We were thinking of heading out tomorrow morning also. If you will take us to Boston on your yacht, I would not object. That certainly beats that bumpy road or the canal. What do you think, mother?" asked father.

"Take that ride father! Anything is better than that bumpy road! Would you be able to come with us Carolyn?"

"I am sorry! I must pass this time! I have some children in school that have missed too much school already. Besides I have to stay to care for Karl and Inga. They are just too young to travel yet!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I will probably be back in about two weeks."

Mother Herta went to get her things packed and Mother went to pack her and father's things. That left Earl, father and me alone for a while. Father soon said he thought he would go tell the children good bye.

This gave me a chance to tell Earl what the pastor had told me at the church.

The next morning all the children, all the grandparents, Earl and I went to Union Landing where the yacht was tied up. Bob had made a special spot for the yacht, so it didn't interfere with the other river boats taking on pig iron or letting off supplies. Everyone got on the yacht except the children and me. We stood and waved bye as the yacht pulled out into the river and turned downstream. For the first time in several months, I breathed a breath of fresh air. I felt burdened with everyone there. It was a great feeling to be alone with my children again! I hadn't been alone with them for some time!

We got into the carriages and headed back to Pine Grove and we all sang songs as we went. As we passed houses and cabins along the way, people came out on their porch to listen! I loved it and the children loved it! Besides that gave us some much needed practice.

Some of the people on the porches applauded as we went by at a leisurely gait. As we got nearer to the cabins of Pine Grove, there wasn't a person that didn't come out on the porch as we passed. We really did enjoy that trip! We hadn't been together like that to sing in about a year! That was one reason to enjoy it and another was that we were happy!

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Seventeen A WILDERNESS JOURNEY

We arrived home so happy that we went into the house and sang some more. I don't know how the children felt, but I felt like a big weight had been lifted from me.

I wouldn't want anyone to get the wrong idea. I love my parents and I love mother Herta. I most certainly do love Earl, but there is just something about not having a big crowd of parents and in-laws all in the house at the same time. Especially with all of them keeping me confined to my room with no hope of being able to do anything for long periods of time. I feel like a bird that has been let out of its cage!

The four servants still would not let me do anything they were supposed to do, which I can understand. If I pay them to do a job, why should I have to do it?

In a few days after Earl had gone to take mother Herta, mother and father to Boston, we got a letter. It was addressed to Ruth Ann in care of me.

Rufus had gotten the mail, so he took the letter to Ruth Ann.

I followed the letter to see what Ruth Ann was about to learn. Ruth Ann took the letter and held it up to her breast for a moment and finally opened it. She read it very carefully. Then she read the whole letter again. She rose from her chair and said, "Mother! He is coming finally! He has had changes take place over there and he hasn't been able to come. He is now living on a plantation in Kentucky! He plans to come and see me next Saturday!"

"I told you to give him a little longer to get in touch with you."

When Saturday came, Ruth Ann got all fixed up pretty. She fixed her hair as he liked it and put her best dress on. She then went to the living room and sat waiting for him to knock. It came up on nine p.m. She got up and angrily said, "If he can't keep a promise to someone he says he loves, then he is a liar and I want nothing more to do with him!" Ruth Ann stormed out of the living room with tears in her eyes. She went to her room. I could hear her crying so I went in to comfort her. It was a wicked thing for him to tell her to expect him and then to never show up! I could think of a lot of things I was going to tell that young man if I ever saw him!

Early the next morning, I heard a knock on the door. I started to go to the door, but Rufus was already on the job. I stood at the door looking past Rufus at none other than a wet and muddy James!

"I'm about twelve hours late, but I didn't think the Ohio River was as big as it is with no bridges and the ferries all shut down for the day."

"Come in James. You can go tell Ruth Ann that her James has arrived all wet and muddy, Rufus. I want to have a chat with this young man!"

James came into the parlor. I made him sit in a straight chair so he wouldn't ruin the other furniture from the water dripping off him!

## Carolyn's Journal

"Suppose you tell me what has happened to keep you from keeping a promise and why you are all wet and muddy!"

"I can answer both questions with one answer. I came north from the plantation and when I arrived at the Ohio River, I looked for a way over it or around it. All of the ferries were stopped for the night, so I thought that there would be a bridge somewhere. I went into the edge of the water and traveled up stream looking for a bridge. I went down stream looking for a bridge and found none in either direction. I decided to swim the river with my horse, but it was already getting dark, so I decided to wait for morning. That is why I am wet, muddy and late! I am sorry that I am late and I am sorry that I am wet and muddy. I just didn't think I was going to need a change of clothes when I left home."

"You certainly have had an ordeal trying to get here! If you will take off your wet boots and leave them here in the parlor, I will take you to a room and let you borrow some of Earl's clothes to wear until your clothes can be washed and dried. I guess being from England, you wouldn't know that there were no bridges across the Ohio in this area. I'm sure you wouldn't have known that the ferries close down before sundown on Saturday in this area. The Ohio is a big long river and at this time of the year it is quite full from the runoff!"

I gave him some of Earl's clothes to put on and took the wet ones to the maid to wash and get dry. I also had her get James' boots from the parlor so she could clean them and dry them. The maid didn't want me to do any of her work, so here was a chance for her to shine!

Ruth Ann made an appearance and didn't see him. "What did he do? Go back already?"

"No, dear! He was all wet, so I have given him some of Earl's clothes until the maid can get his washed, dried and ironed."

At that moment James came out of the room wearing Earl's clothes. Earl is almost six feet tall and James is just about five feet tall. Earl is more muscular than James, so his clothes have to be larger than James' clothes. The result was that when he came out of the room wearing Earl's clothes, the sleeves were rolled up and the pant legs were rolled up. The clothes themselves were baggy on James. Ruth Ann saw this and began laughing.

"You surely do look funny in those clothes!" She laughed and then I laughed and finally James laughed too. When the three of us quit laughing, Ruth Ann looked at James and demanded, "Where have you been? I have been waiting and waiting to hear from you! I expected you would write a letter or two telling why you hadn't come. Please explain this to me!"

"Why don't you two go into the parlor to discuss this and I will have Liza set an extra plate for breakfast?"

The two of them went into the parlor and continued their conversation. I rushed Liza along with breakfast. She soon had it all ready, so I had Ruth Ann and James wash their hands and come to the table while Liza set the breakfast on the table. As we were eating, Ruth Ann revealed to me that James had written several

## Carolyn's Journal

times! The only letter that we had gotten from him was the one from him in Kentucky. "I'll check with the Post and see if we can find those lost letters."

After breakfast I asked Rufus to please go to the company store and see if they might have those missing letters for some reason. Rufus went immediately. We went on about our business at the house and Ruth Ann and James went back to the parlor. In about a half hour Ruth Ann came out of the parlor and asked me to step into the parlor to hear what James had to say.

I went into the parlor and Ruth Ann said, "You aren't going to believe this, mother!" Then she asked James to tell me what he had just told her.

He started out, "My parents were looking for property that they might buy in America. They had been thinking of moving to America for sometime. When they thought I might marry a girl from America, they found some advertisements of property for sale. They wrote letters, but by the time the letters were received the property was always sold. They found one plantation in Kentucky that was for sale and no one bought it before we posted a letter to them."

"My parents negotiated with the owner and bought the property tentative to seeing it in person. My father came to America to look over the property. The property belonged to a widow who wanted to sell it and move back to Virginia and her old home. She claimed to have had four boys. She said that they were very nice boys who had never given her a minute's trouble. Her husband sent them for four runaway slaves. They found the slaves in Ohio and came to the place that had them in Ohio to bring them back. They were at an abolitionists home and the four boys were shot and killed. When their father came to get the bodies and some answers, the sheriff told the boy's father that there wasn't anything he could or would do against the people who had shot her dear boys. When their father got back to the plantation with the boy's bodies, he gave them a proper Christian Burial. It was more than he could take because he died from pining over the loss of the boys! The mother then had the father interred. Her next decision was what was she going to do with the place? It was really too much for her to care for, so she decided to sell the plantation." James paused here in his story.

I asked, "Do you want me to tell you who those people are that your parents have been dealing with?"

"Why? Do you know them?"

"Their name has to be Bodine. That mother is like the rest of the family, lying and can't tell the truth! I can tell you more about that family than she has. What I tell you will be the truth and you can check it out by any number of people. She can't!"

"I would like to hear a corrected version because father would like to know the truth."

"The Bodines grew up in Virginia just across the eastern border of Kentucky. They were such liars and hellions that people around tried to get them to simmer down. The result was that the Bodines started getting worse! They started burning homes and barns of those who opposed them. This was more than the people in the area could stand, so they joined together and one evening they

## Carolyn's Journal

circled the Bodine house with the intentions of burning the house down and forcing the Bodines to leave the area. Someone had tipped the Bodines off and they were waiting for the townspeople with guns. When the people came close enough on the outside, they began shooting at them. They killed one of the men outside. The man shot was the school teacher who was well liked by everyone. When the others saw that he had been shot, they were like bumble bees that had been stirred up. They charged the house and threw the lantern the school teacher had been holding into the Bodine house. The house began burning and being a dry time, it burned to the ground in nothing flat. The Bodines were burned out! There had been loss of life, but that was calculated before they had begun the venture. The people outside disappeared and the Bodines spent the night wherever and however they could."

"The next morning they loaded a pack mule and started walking to the west and north. They were looking for the Breaks in the Mountains. The Breaks in the Mountains is a big gap that goes all the way from Virginia over into Kentucky. The Russell Fork River goes through it and over the years has cut this big gap. People have traveled it at times to go to Kentucky. It is a rough dangerous trip as there are many falls and cliffs with very little room on the side of the river for travel. Most travelers follow a trail going along the side of the gap. This trail is just wide enough for the feet of a horse or mule. One lady recalled going through the Breaks riding side saddle on a horse! She said that she made quite certain that she stuck onto the horse because the side of the horse she was on was the side where there was nothing below her!"

"This was the gap the Bodines were going through to get over into Kentucky. The Bodines arrived in Kentucky and found a place they could homestead. They bought slaves and cleared the land and built them a plantation type home on the land. Before long they were making good money from the plantation and they went back to doing the things they had been doing in Virginia. The people around them complained to the father. His usual response was, "I'll look into it!", then nothing was done. The boys were now much bigger and did as they wanted. They were just a group of bullies. They all fought together. They never fought alone because they could get beaten! They mistreated their slaves, especially the young slave girls. The boys would whip the slaves for no reason!"

"Earl went to Kentucky to get some servants for the house. He was directed to the Bodine plantation and bought Liza, Rufus, Demetrius and Jemima. He paid for these slaves and brought them back to Ohio. Once here, he set them free and hired them to work for us. The four Bodines showed up at our door one morning to take the four of them back. They were drunk and even kicked the front door in! Being drunk, they were stronger than usual and were no match for a small person weighing less than one hundred pounds."

I related to him the story of how the Bodines had done when they came for Liza.

"That certainly is a different story than we got from Mrs. Bodine!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"What I have told you is the truth and you may check out part of it with Ruth Ann and Liza. Rufus will also attest to the facts of the case. One of the girls I trained married a young man that had relatives in Virginia. They knew the Bodines and he filled me in on the Virginia part of the story. Those boys should have been put in jail and kept there a long time ago!"

"I will tell my parents when I get back!"

"You better have your parents have the sale of the property witnessed and notarized. Being a Bodine she may seek to nullify the sale someday!"

"I will tell my parents and maybe they can get the deed recorded or some such thing. They are very happy living there and I know they do not want the place taken away from them! I am glad you told me this and I believe you. I can trust you!"

"Thank you for that, James."

I went back to what I was doing before Ruth Ann came for me. Ruth Ann and James stayed in the parlor talking for a while. He then told her he needed to get started for home. She looked at him in Earl's clothes and said, "I think you better wait for your clothes to get dry and ironed!" She laughed at him as she made this remark. "I better check and see how your clothes are coming for you."

Ruth Ann looked for Jemima and when she found her she asked how James' clothes were doing. It would be about another hour before they would be ready. Ruth Ann went back and told James. Ruth Ann suggested that they take a walk around the place. James agreed, so they began walking through the house.

Meanwhile Rufus came back from the company store and came to me to report.

"Miss Care'lin, the post am closed. This am Sunday!"

"I am sorry to cause you all that trouble, Rufus! I completely forgot today was Sunday. I even failed to go to church! I was supposed to see the pastor after service and I forgot that. I'll bet he thinks I am a great one!"

"Ah's shore ya all 'I be luv'd by him anyhow!"

It was lunch time and Liza had lunch on the table and called us all to eat. Ruth Ann helped with the children as usual. "You are good with children, Ruth Ann" commented James.

Ruth Ann's face turned red as she said, "Thank you James!"

"She is a very good governess. I'm going to miss her if you two should happen to decide to marry" I commented. Ruth Ann's face got redder.

"She is a very good governess! When Suzie got married and left, Ruth Ann became my governess. She also takes care of the triplets along with Hilda and Herta. She has always treated us well and helped us when we needed help. I don't know if we will let her go!" remarked Erin.

Ruth Ann was so embarrassed by all of this attention that she got up from the table and went to her room! I went to see if she was all right. She was in her room crying!

"What is wrong, Ruth Ann? Why in the world are you crying?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I am crying because I am so happy! When I came to work for you, I didn't know whether I was ever loved or not by my family. Since I have been here, you have taken me places, bragged on me and always made me feel that I was really needed around here. Now the children are doing the same thing! I don't know if I could tell James I will marry him and have to leave all of you! I'm so happy! I guess I'm like Suzie always says, 'I could pop!'"

"If James does propose, you answer him whatever you want to answer. Don't you give any thought about us because I can train another governess, but you may never get another chance to marry as nice a young man as James!"

"Thank you, mother. I'll wash my eyes and face and go back to the table now!"

I went back to the table and Ruth Ann followed me in a few minutes.

James stood up with his napkin tucked in his belt and helped seat Ruth Ann like a gentleman should and then asked Ruth Ann if she was all right.

"I'll be all right now. Thank you for asking."

After lunch James' clothes were dry and ready for him to put on. He went to the room I had shown him before and changed to his own clothes. He came out of the room in a few minutes and looked like a different person!

Ruth Ann looked at him and said, "You look like the James I fell in love with now!"

"Thank you! Now I have to get back home. Can anyone tell me of a ferry that I can cross the Ohio on?"

"This is Sunday and the ferries only run three times - once after church hours, once around three and once just before dark. I will draw you a map so you can find it." I drew him a map. He took my map and kissed Ruth Ann on the cheek as he embraced her.

Demetrius had brought James' horse around to the edge of the front porch. James climbed aboard his horse and rode off in the direction I had shown him. He turned as he rode and waved bye to all of us. Ruth Ann blew him a kiss as he left.

This was enough to let me know that I better find a governess to take Ruth Ann's place. I looked and asked about until I found a young lady who could benefit from working for me and we could benefit from having her around. She lived on a ridge out from Arabia. Arabia is a small Post in a general store. There are a few homes along Symmes Creek with farms extending away in all directions. It was a long way out there and it would probably take me four days to make the trip. I was fortunate that I knew some people about half way or more out. The Bradshaw's had a son who had married one of the girls I had trained. I would surely be welcome there overnight! I wrote and asked them if I might stay over night going and coming. I got a letter back in about a week and they told me that I was most welcome to come and stay with them as long as I wished.

I asked Nancy to keep an eye on the children while I was gone. She agreed and wished me a safe journey. The next morning I had a surrey brought to the front of the house. I got Minerva and Inga and Karl. I climbed onto the surrey after I had handed the children up to Minerva and put the luggage on the rear. I

## Carolyn's Journal

then started on my journey with twelve children, one governess and four hired help waving bye to us. I turned and blew them all a kiss.

After traveling for several hours we came to Etna furnace. We turned to the right there and went passed the furnace. I was going to have to go up a steep hill and I was told the road was rough and almost impassible in about five miles. It would be passable if it didn't rain. If it rained, the road would be slick and there would be a possibility of sliding off the road and down into a big ravine.

It hadn't been raining, so I pressed on. I went up this steep hill and when I got part way up the hill there was a large slip in the road. This is a place where the road has slipped off into the valley below. I looked at the slip and found that part of the road was wide enough to accommodate the surrey. Minerva was very nervous about going on. I told her that we were going on and if the Lord wanted us to slide over the side there wouldn't be anything we could do to stop it!

Minerva condescended, so we pressed on with Minerva's prayers rising above us in rapid succession! As we went over the slip, the right-hand wheels were next to the hill up close. The left-hand wheels dropped down somewhat, but the surrey went on across the slip without incident. When we got to the other side, Minerva wanted to know if I would stop for a while so she might take care of a problem she had. I looked at her and stopped the horse.

In a few minutes we started on up the road to the top of the hill. We then followed the ridge along for a short ways to a point where the hill broke over the other side. Just before it broke over the other side there was another ridge going off to the right. We took the ridge to the right as far as we could. We then took the road on down the other side of the hill and followed Aaron's Creek.

I was to follow Aaron's Creek on for a ways until I saw a big barn on the right of the road. There would be a farm house on the other side of the road, set back away from the road. We traveled on and the mosquitoes and horse flies were thick. We covered the babies up so they wouldn't get bitten so much. The horse was lathered up so they went for him more than they did for us. We got several bites but not too bad. I started the horse on a trot so we could get out of them quicker. In about four miles we spotted what we thought was the big barn we were looking for. It turned out to be the wrong barn so we traveled on.

We had been talking as we went along and suddenly there was a big barn on the right. I looked to the left and there was a farm house on the left set back from the road. This had to be the place we were looking for. I looked for the lane to the house and found it in front of the barn. I turned into the lane. The lane went over a branch and up to the house and around two large maple trees. I followed the lane to the porch. This was a beautiful location! I liked it almost better than the location my house was on! The house was a wood frame house and all painted white. It was a sight for my sore eyes! The girl I had trained came out on the porch and embraced me and gave me a kiss on the cheek. I introduced her to Minerva and the two babies. We went into the house and sat in the parlor and talked. Minerva asked where we might be staying, so she could get our things there and then get Karl and Inga set for the night. Sarah called a

## Carolyn's Journal

servant in to show Minerva where to go. Meanwhile Sarah and I talked some more. Her husband came in and Sarah introduced me to him.

He looked at me and said, "I have never had a chance to thank you for teaching and training Sarah and for having that cotillion so I could meet her. She is a wonderful wife and I am crazy about her. When she read your letter asking to stay overnight here, I believe I was happier than she was. At last I was going to get a chance to do something for you and to thank you for getting us together."

"I am glad you are happily married and I want to know if you have anymore children than the one I see on the way!"

Sarah blushed and said, "This is the first one, but we hope to have many more. I don't know whether I ever told you or not, honey, but Miss Carolyn has twelve children of her own!"

"I am married again and now I am Baroness Von Ribbonauff! I also have two more children which gives me fourteen children. That was the last two you saw come in with Minerva."

"I didn't know that you remarried."

"I am and now I have homes in England and Prussia as well as here. The one in Prussia is a castle."

"That sounds like a fun life! Where do you spend most of your time?"

"I spend most of my time in Pine Grove. I told Earl when I married him I would not be able to leave Pine Grove. If he wanted to marry me he was going to have to move to Ohio."

"I would love to meet your husband sometime and I would like to visit you in the castle sometime."

"Maybe some winter when your work is done for the year, you and your husband can come to Pine Grove. We could take Earl's yacht to Prussia and spend a little time in the castle. After spending time in Prussia, we could go to England and spend some time there. Maybe we could have some time to do some sight seeing in England and do some shopping."

"That sounds like great fun! I'll look forward to that!"

We talked and chatted and in a while dinner was ready and on the table. It looked delicious!

We talked well into the night and I finally had to go to bed so I could go see about my new governess the next day.

The next morning I was aroused by the glorious aroma of some wonderful things cooking in the kitchen. I freshened up, put on my clothes and fixed my hair. I went down to the living room and the smells coming from the kitchen almost made me pass up the living room!

I sat in the living room and Sarah came in and told me breakfast would be ready soon. I told her I hadn't smelled such a wonderful breakfast in a long, long time!

Sarah's husband came in from doing his chores and went to the kitchen to wash. He would milk the cow after breakfast. Sarah came in and told me breakfast was ready and for me to come. When I saw the breakfast table, I knew

## Carolyn's Journal

why I had been smelling all of those wonderful smells. There were biscuits and gravy, chicken and dumplings, ham, bacon, sausage, eggs and all kinds of seasonings and other things.

I said, "Surely you two don't eat this way every morning!"

"No. We only go all out when we have a Baroness in the house!" Laughed Sarah. Minerva looked up from her plate and laughed.

"You folks couldn't eat this way all the time. If you did, you would be as fat as cows!"

"No, you are right. We don't eat this way all the time. The cook loves to show off her skills when we have company."

"Just the smell of all this food would make me fat if I smelled it each day!" I said.

We all ate breakfast and I headed out to see my new governess. I decided to leave Minerva at Sarah's place with the children as I expected to return there that afternoon.

I entered the surrey and headed for a place I had never been, but with God's help I expected to get there! I traveled down Aaron's creek for about a mile and then turned to the left. This road traveled along a valley for a ways and then started up a hill. I traveled up the hill. At the top of the hill, I turned to the left again and followed along the ridge until I came to the second cabin. The road had been narrow and bumpy. Apparently there hadn't been much travel in and out of there.

I stopped the surrey and asked of those who were within hearing range if this was the home of the people I was to see. They informed me that I was at the right place. I got off the surrey and standing there on the porch was a young girl barefoot with a work dress on. Beside her was a slim man, a heavy set woman and some other young people I took to be her brothers and sisters.

They all welcomed me very cordially and I told them who I was and reminded them that I had sent a letter about my mission. We all went into the house to talk. I told them what my offer was for Minnie Belle's services.

"That appears to be a fair 'nuff offer ma'am. I don't see how she could ever do any better!" remarked her father.

"I want to hear what Minnie Belle thinks. It is going to affect her more than the rest of us!" commented her mother.

All eyes were on Minnie Belle. She looked like she was thinking very seriously for a girl of fifteen. Minnie Belle was a bit over weight. She had beautiful black hair that hung to her hips. Her face was round and she had many features in her face that resembled the Indian in her ancestors. The rest of the children did not seem to have these features.

In a moment Minnie Belle spoke and said, "I know that you folks can use me and perhaps need me here at home. I also know that you folks are struggling to get enough food to feed the animals and us children. With one less mouth to feed and body to clothe, you might be able to do better. I will be getting a salary so I can send you some money from time to time to help. I will be able to finish my

## Carolyn's Journal

education, be trained by Miss Carolyn and maybe find a rich man to marry so I can help you more." She turned to me and said, "Miss Carolyn, I'm going to go with you if my Ma and Pa will let me!"

Pa spoke up, "Honey, I think you are making a good decision. We will miss you and all your help, but we know you will be doing well."

Ma said, "We will miss all the help you have been giving, but now you are helping even more!"

Minnie Belle hugged and kissed each one of her family. She went to her room in the back of the house and came back with a pillow case with her things in it. She brought a doll out that had apparently been hers. The doll was ragged and one could tell that it had been loved. She gave the doll to her sister and told her that she could have the doll now and to take good care of it for her. It was somewhat sad to see that here was a girl of fifteen and she could put all of her things into a pillow case half filled! I was hoping that I could change her life in that respect.

Before we left her father asked that we have prayer to ask God that we have a safe journey and that the Lord would bless Minnie Belle in her new life away from home. After the prayer Minnie Belle and I got into the surrey and started out the road and down the hill. Minnie Belle waved at her family and shouted "I Love You." She was crying and it made me want to cry also.

I remarked to Minnie Belle, "You will be back to see them, I'm sure. You aren't leaving them forever!"

"I know, Miss Carolyn. I've just been living with them so long that it ain't going to seem the same. I guess I will miss them, but I have to do this to help my parents. They need help just now."

"You can write and let them know how you are doing from time to time. We will see if we can't send them a little money to help out when you write."

"That will be fine if I have earned it. I'm not going to take a dole. We earn all we take!"

"I am sure you will earn all you send."

The bumpy road caused the surrey to thump and bang and rock as we went down the hill to Aaron's Creek. The road was so bumpy that the surrey made so much noise we could not hear each other as we tried to talk. We sat bumping along silently until we got on Aaron's Creek road. It wasn't as bumpy so we could talk to one another then. It wasn't too long before we got to Sarah's house. It was now mid afternoon. It had taken me a little longer than I had expected to get back to the children. They were starved, so I nursed them and they forgave me when their tummies were full.

Minnie Belle hadn't seen the twins before and she looked at them and asked, "How do you tell them apart?" She hadn't seen that one was a boy and the other a girl.

I laughed at her and said, "That is easy! One is a boy and one is a girl!"

She looked at me and blushed a little and said, "I guess I have a lot to learn! I'll try not to make that mistake again."

## Carolyn's Journal

" You will have trouble telling the twins, Herta and Hilda apart and you will have a real problem with the triplets. It won't be your fault. They are even confusing for me."

"Any one that doesn't know them very well has a hard time telling them apart. I work with them and I have a problem at times. So I expect it will be natural for a newcomer to get confused" offered Minerva.

"Minnie Belle, I would like for you to meet Minerva. Minerva was the first governess that I hired. You will be working with her. This other lady is our most gracious host, Sarah. She has allowed us to stay at her house while we are traveling through."

"I know Miss Sarah. She has been more than kind to us at times. Our house is just up on the hill from here."

"You mean I could have walked up for you and saved all that bumpy ride?"

Sarah Spoke up, "You could have walked, but you would have gotten into all kinds of trouble, perhaps with bugs and snakes. To say nothing of the mud and brush you would have to go through."

Sarah got to talking with Minnie Belle and she told her, "You have not made a mistake! You have made a good decision and you will never regret it. There are many girls in Pine Grove and surrounding area who would do anything to have the chance you now have!"

"Thank you for those kind words, Sarah, but I think you have over stated yourself!"

"No way!"

"Minnie Belle, did you know that she trained Sarah, had a cotillion and invited me!" remarked Mr. Bradshaw.

"I didn't know that! You two met at a cotillion, whatever that is?"

"A cotillion is a dance. Yes, we met at this dance. I fell head over heels in love with her!"

"I fell madly in love with him! We were married shortly after and have been very happy! Did you know that I grew up in a family of eight and in a log cabin with a dirt floor? I only had one dress to wear for good and every day. I didn't know what the world had to offer me, but from where I was it looked like a log cabin with a dirt floor."

"You mean that you grew up in a place worse than mine?" "You can see what Miss Carolyn has done for me, so you can see why I can't say enough good things about her. I'm not the only girl that she has helped like that. There are numbers of others that she has helped."

We sat and chatted for a while and I began to smell the wonderful aromas coming from the kitchen again. It had to be nearing dinner time. When I called it dinner, Sarah let me know that farmers call it supper time and the noon meal is dinner time. So that evening we had supper!

I noticed that Minnie Belle ate well. She probably hadn't had that large a meal in her life!

## Carolyn's Journal

The next morning I got Minnie Belle and Minerva up so we could get the children and ourselves ready for the trip back to Pine Grove. Everyone ate a hearty breakfast. We got started on our way back to Pine Grove. It had been nice to see how well Sarah was doing and how she was loving every minute of her married life.

As we went along the mosquitoes and horseflies began to get bad again and the horse wanted to run. I couldn't let him run! If he were running when we went over the slip, we would probably have a wreck! I pulled back on the reins as hard as I could and we went over the slip slowly. In a few minutes we were on a leveler piece of road so I let the horse have its head. It had a spell of running and then it slowed to a trot. Minnie Belle and Minerva had covered us with prayers as we came down over that slip and hill. I guess it was probably those prayers that kept us from breaking an axle as we bounced down the road with the horse running at full tilt.

When we pulled into the drive of my house, Minnie Belle looked at the house and asked, "You live here?"

"Yes, I live here with my fourteen children!"

The children were all happy to see that I had gotten back safely. They ran up to me and almost knocked me over! Ruth Ann came with them. They were all glad to see me with their new governess. I introduced each child to Minnie Belle.

Minnie Belle looked at me when I had finished introducing the children and asked, "You have all those children?"

"Yes, I do! They are all mine except Ruth Ann and Minerva!"

"It's no wonder you need help!"

I laughed at Minnie Belle as I took her into the house to get her settled in a room. I gave her a room and she looked around the room and asked, "This whole big room is just for me? This is awful big for just one person!"

"Yes, Minnie Belle. This whole big room is for you as long as you stay here!"

"This is almost as big as our whole house! I had a room at home, but I had to share it with my sisters. It wasn't near as big as this!"

I had Jemima bring clean sheets, a wash rag and towel for Minnie Belle. I showed Minnie Belle that the chifforobe was for her dresses and petticoats. The chiffonier was for her under clothes.

"When am I going to learn what I have to do?"

"That will start in the morning. I'll have Ruth Ann start teaching you how to do what she does. You will gradually take over her duties."

"Are you letting her go?"

"No. She will probably get married soon and then you will take her job full time."

"I hope she doesn't get married too soon. I have to have time to learn the job."

"I think you will know her job before she gets married. This boy may not even propose marriage to her! We will just have to wait and see."

## Carolyn's Journal

Ruth Ann came in and told me that James was coming to court this Saturday and he thought he could do it right this time. Minnie Belle was settling into her work and when Saturday evening came, there was a knock on the door. Rufus answered the door and I could see it was James. He wasn't wet and muddy this time!

Ruth Ann came to the door and gave James that big hug she had planned for him.

The rest of us moved to the living room and left Ruth Ann and James in the parlor. I was certain that James would propose to her this time. James and Ruth Ann came out of the parlor and James told me that his parents thanked me for telling them about the Bodines. They had the deed recorded in the county so no one can come back later and claim that the place wasn't paid for.

"Are you two going to talk about the Bodines or are you going to tell Miss Carolyn the news?" Ruth Ann was so excited that she was almost bouncing.

"I have just proposed to Ruth Ann and she has accepted subject to your approval."

"You don't ask me for her hand, James. You have to go to her father and ask him. She can take you to him, so you ask him. As far as I am concerned you know you have my approval!"

Ruth Ann held her ring up for me to see. It was a beautiful ring. She and James took off for her own home. They were gone for a while and then they came back.

"Her father is a tough nut to crack! He told me I could have her, but I had to take the family too!"

"He was kidding you, silly! He wasn't planning to move in."

"Have you two thought about where you will have the wedding and when?"

"Not yet." Ruth Ann asked with a 'please' smile on her face, "Do you think it would be possible to have it here?"

"Of Course! Just be certain you both have decided on the place and the date. If you can't work together on that, you don't belong together!" I reminded them.

"I think we can agree on those things, mother. We are going to need help on getting the invitations out and who we are going to invite."

"I'll be glad to help you on getting the invitations out. The only ones I think you would want to invite that I know are your parents, sister, brothers and any close relative."

"I know one whole family I am going to invite. Some of them will even be in part of my wedding like they were in Suzie's wedding!"

"That is up to you and James to decide. Don't you make all the plans!"

"Miss Carolyn, you don't have to worry about that! I insist that you be at our wedding and if your mother is present, we would like for her to play the harp for our wedding!"

"I don't know whether she is going to be available or not. She has a tour planned for sometime this summer."

## Carolyn's Journal

James' mother came as he came to see Ruth Ann. She wanted to get with me in the planning of the wedding. We got everything planned including the guest list. We pressed James and Ruth Ann for a date for the wedding. They finally decided on a date, June 15. His mother and I got the invitations ready to work on when I thought of something I needed to check with Ruth Ann.

I went to check with Ruth Ann and after conferring with her. I discovered that she was going to have to move the date either a week back or a week ahead. Instead of June 15 it would be June 22. James and Ruth Ann were happy to have the date set. We were now able to get the invitations out.

Earl came back and brought Suzie, Charles and their little one back with him. They were planning to stay until I went back with Earl in the summer. Mother had sent word that she wanted the 'singing O'Deigh's' to go with her on her tour. Suzie had told mother that she just couldn't go at that time.

I looked at Suzie. It was good to see her again and have her in my home again. The scars from her beating were still showing some on her face. I guess she will carry that beating with her to her grave! It is a shame that it happened because it wasn't necessary! I asked, "What are your plans for while you are here, Suzie?"

"I plan to see my parents, visit with Ellen and stay with you so I can be with all of my old charges. I know they must be a lot bigger than when I was here."

Some of the children found out that their father had returned and that Suzie had come with him. The children came running out of the nursery to hug their father and Suzie. They nearly knocked me down getting to their father. They pushed Charles aside so they could get to Suzie! They were almost wild with joy! Charles and I were just fixtures in the room as far as they were concerned. The older children remembered Suzie and loved her.

I got Earl separated from the children to where I could take him to the dinning room and talk to him. "Ruth Ann and James are getting married on June 22 in our home."

"I suppose that you have been working on that now."

"Yes I have, but I have also had to replace Ruth Ann, so I have done that."

"Is she someone I know?"

"I don't think so. Her name is Minnie Belle. She comes from a very poor family back out toward Arabia. She needs work and help and I can give her both."

"As long as she can learn to do the work and satisfy you and the children, it is all right with me."

"Thank you, dear." I kissed him on the cheek.

Carolyn's Journal

RUTH ANN MARRIES  
Chapter Eighteen

Suzie came by and whispered that she wanted to talk to me in private. I went to a bedroom that wasn't being used with her. "What is wrong, Suzie?"

"Mother, are you sure you want to have Minnie Belle as a governess?"

"Yes, I am. I know that I have some work to do on her, but I'm sure we can overcome her problems!"

"Surely you aren't serious! She can't do anything. She doesn't have any decent clothes and besides she has an odor. Mother, she just plain stinks!"

"I seem to remember someone that was brought to me to help years ago and she didn't have any clothes to wear. She didn't have any underclothes on!"

Suzie laughed a little laugh and said, "I guess I remember that too! But I did not stink!"

"Do you remember when mother was going to fix your hair?"

"Yes, I remember that. She fixed me up beautiful for the first time in my life!"

"Do you remember what she had you do first?"

"I remember. She had me take a bath!" Suzie thought a minute and then questioned, "Do you mean that I stunk too?"

"Does that give you an idea about what you might do for Minnie Belle?"

"I'll have the bath tub taken to her room with water so she can get a bath! I'll help with Minnie Belle and teach her if it is all right with you."

"That would be fine. I don't have any clothes made for Minnie Belle yet. I don't know what she can wear. She only has the clothes on her back."

"She is so heavy that I can't give her any of my clothes and I know of no one around that size, do you?"

"No, Suzie, I don't. We'll just have to give her time off until she can get some clothes sewn. Would you mind doing your old duties with the children until we can get Minnie Belle some clothes?"

"Mother, I'll do one better. I'll take over my old job with the children because I have mine in there too. I'll let her choose one of my dresses and perhaps we can let the seams out and take up the hem to where it will fit her. I'll let her have some underclothes and we can do the same thing with them. That will get her into good clothes sooner."

"We will have to see if that will work. Now suppose that you start with the bath and fixing her hair."

"I will see that she gets a bath and into some clothes, but I am not certain about the hair. I'm not too good at that."

"You get her a bath and into some clothes and I will help with the hair." I smiled as I said this. I couldn't help but think that things were going in a full circle. Here was a young woman I had taken in and helped years ago, now willing to help another girl in similar circumstances! I was beginning to see results of my work.

## Carolyn's Journal

Suzie had the tub brought into Minnie Belle's room and the maid brought water for the tub. Suzie told Minnie Belle that she wanted to get her hair fixed up pretty and they needed to wash it first.

While Suzie was working with Minnie Belle, I checked on the children. Ruth Ann and James were in there with the children. She was doing her job and showing James what a wonderful mother she would be at the same time. She was smarter than I thought! I caught Earl and reminded him that he was going to have to be all dressed up for the wedding, so he should get his things picked out and ready for the occasion.

He looked at me and said, "They warned me that if you couldn't work in the house, you would find something else to get into that I hadn't even thought you would get into."

"Whatever do you mean, Earl? Ruth Ann wanted the wedding here and I agreed. How could I refuse one of my own daughters?" I grinned at him as I finished saying this.

"You are really sneaky aren't you? You still haven't gotten past being sneaky with me have you?"

"Why honey, I haven't cheated on racing you downstairs in a long time!"

"No, you haven't, but you make up for that in other ways and you know it! I still love you like I did when you and I first met." He grabbed me and hugged me tight and kissed me a big kiss.

"If I get that for being sneaky, I wonder what I would get for being devious!" I remarked laughing at him.

"I can't help loving you, honey. You have given me fourteen children and there aren't many wives that have done that! That in itself is an accomplishment! You are just one in a million! Not only have you given me all those lovely children, but you have done all those wonderful things in the community. Not to mention being the Indian's Great White Indian Princess! I don't understand why you aren't happy to just sit back and enjoy seeing what you have done bear fruit!"

"I am seeing some of my efforts bear fruit at this moment! I guess you know that you are soon going to be the father of fifteen children."

"How is that?" He hadn't heard my last statement.

"Suzie, who was a waif when I took her in is helping Minnie Belle get fixed up pretty. Now that is a fruit if I ever saw one!"

"Now that certainly is! I know that must make you feel great!"

"It certainly does!"

I left Earl and went to see if Suzie was ready for me to help with Minnie Belle's hair. She was so I went to get a pair of sharp shears and came back to Minnie Belle and Suzie.

"Minnie Belle, I'm going to trim the bottom of your hair straight across like mine. It has to be straightened up or we can't go on. Do you mind?"

"You cut what you have to. Just leave me enough to make a ball if I have to put it up."

"Has it all been brushed back and down the back?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Yes, it has, mother. She and I both brushed it. I think her scalp is all red from so much brushing!"

I cut the bottom of her hair straight across . Then I cut her some bangs like mine. Her hair was about the same color as mine. Erin had hair the same color.

Suzie and I worked on Minnie Belle's hair to where it was pretty. When we finished, I led Minnie Belle to a mirror. She looked at her image in the mirror and said, "You folks have done fixed me up plumb pretty! I still have to wear those old clothes! That just ruins the whole look!"

"We will work more on that tomorrow. Right now I want you to come into my room and see if I have anything you might want altered to fit you!" directed Suzie.

They went into Suzie's room and looked at dresses. In a while Minnie Belle picked out a dress and Suzie told her they would make it bigger to fit her tomorrow. Then Minnie Belle tried on a pair of Suzie's bloomer. They were a little snug, but they fit. Suzie told Minnie Belle to keep them on and tomorrow they would adjust them.

When Minnie Belle came out of Suzie's room, she had a big smile on her face. She had come to realize that someone cared for her and wanted to help her. I told Earl that I had seen that same smile on Suzie's face, Minerva's face, Ruth Ann's face and on the faces of all the girls I had taught and worked with.

It was a smile that says "I am important to some one! Some one cares how I look!" It was a smile that made me feel gratified for what I was doing!

As time went by and we had a chance, we got Minnie Belle fixed up with new clothes and she was pretty. The wedding date was almost upon us. I had to get all the children all packed for our trip to England. I had to practice the children for singing with their grandmother. The children were all excited about getting a chance to sing before royalty!

Suzie was excited and happy about the change in Minnie Belle. Minnie Belle wouldn't have been recognized by her own mother! She was slimming down and with being washed clean and wearing pretty clothes she was a far cry from what I had brought back from Arabia. Suzie had done an excellent job bringing that metamorphosis about! This helped Suzie also. Now she knew how she might help some of the poor people in England.

Ruth Ann was practically pacing the floor! She was getting nervous about the wedding. Ruth Ann's mother pointed out to her that she had not invited her grandmother and grandfather! Ruth Ann came to me and told me. I told her to write out an invitation to them and hand deliver it to them. She would need to dress up pretty so they could see how pretty she was.

I had Demetrius hitch a horse to a buggy so Ruth Ann could take the invitation out to her grandparents. Ruth Ann wrote out the invitation and then I checked her to see that she was fixed up pretty.

I asked, "Do you know where they live?"

"Yes! They work in the Lawrence Furnace."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I think someone should ride with you. There is no telling what could happen to a pretty girl on that road alone!"

She suggested that James go with her. I rejected that idea, "Not unless you plan to take a chaperone with you. I guess it best that I go."

I told Earl where I was going and that we would be back soon.

Ruth Ann and I headed out to Lawrence Furnace and her grandparents place. In a while we arrived at their cabin safely and gave them the invitation. Her grandfather invited us to come and 'sit a spell'. Ruth Ann told them that we couldn't stay, but she would come sometime with her husband when they were married.

They saw how pretty Ruth Ann was fixed up and they agreed that they would come to the wedding because they knew that she would be the prettiest bride around! This boosted Ruth Ann's spirit a lot.

We started back to Pine Grove and as we passed a bush beside the road, a couple of drunks stepped out from behind the bush. One grabbed the horse's bridal and stopped the horse.

The one drunk said to the other one, "Looks like we have caught two of the prettiest ladies around, Zeke!"

"You shore are right 'bout that, Clem!"

"You ladies give us what we want and we won't hurt you none."

"Do you know where the last four are who tried to force me?"

"Nope! And I don't care!" replied Zeke.

"They are all four dead!"

"Jes' how did you do that, tickle them to death with funny stories?" laughed Clem .

"No. They were shot by my husband and bitten by two copperheads - just like those two at your feet." Clem dropped the horse's bridal as he looked down and two huge birds swooped down out of the air and attacked the two of them. I whipped the horse to go and went on down the road. I stopped long enough to turn around and see what happened to Clem and Zeke. There hadn't been any copperheads, but the birds were real and they were putting a hurting on those two. I turned and started the horse on down the road to home.

Ruth Ann was all nervous as she said, "Mother, I don't know how you could be so calm! You faced those two like you weren't a bit afraid! I was about to fall apart!"

"Pull yourself together Ruth Ann. They didn't get what they wanted, but they got what they deserve!"

"What was that?"

"Those birds have more than likely pecked their eyes out by now."

"How do you know that?"

"I'm not the Great White Indian Princess for nothing!" I laughed.

"If that is what saved us back there, I praise God you were with me! I was about to do what they wanted!"

"Never give up until everything has been tried."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I never saw any snakes. How did you know they were there?"

"I was running a bluff hoping they would drop the bridle so we could get away. The birds came and I knew my animals had saved me again. You are with me, so you were saved also."

"I would love to pet those birds! They saved our lives. Do you know what kind they were?"

"I don't know and I really don't care. They saved my life and I have asked God to protect them."

We arrived back home and the first thing Ruth Ann did was tell the others about being stopped and almost forced. Then she told how the two big birds had come down and attacked the men to where we could get away.

Earl looked at me and asked, "Is that what goes on around you when I'm not present?"

I looked at him with a smile, "Sometimes."

Charles, who saw how visibly shaken Ruth Ann was asked, "Are you all right, Ruth Ann?"

Suzie put her arm around Ruth Ann and helped her into the house.

"You should have seen mother. She had nerves of steel. She told them that the last four who tried to force her are dead! Then she told them that the copperheads at their feet would kill them. When they dropped the reins to look, mother whipped the horse to go."

"Weren't you afraid, mother?" Suzie asked.

"I didn't have time to be! I was afraid for Ruth Ann. I didn't know if my friends would protect her or not. They did!"

"What friends?" Earl wanted to know.

"Those two birds. They flew in to protect Ruth Ann and me!"

Earl exclaimed, "Praise God for that!"

I checked on Ruth Ann during the night to make certain that she was all right. That could have been devastating to her. It could have ruined her marriage to James.

The next morning Earl said, "They should hang a medal around those bird's necks."

"That would be funny! Two birds flying around with medals hanging from their necks!" I laughed.

The next week Ruth Ann was married. We had sewn a lot of clothes for Minnie Belle so she was able to be fixed up pretty. I had everything packed for all of us to take off for England.

Ruth Ann had tears in her eyes as she told all the children 'bye. She had come to love them. She openly cried on my shoulder as she told me 'bye. I cried a little too. She had become like one of my own children just as Minerva and Suzie had. They were my grown daughters and I was proud of the fact that she and Suzie had gotten such nice husbands.

Earl kissed her on the cheek and bid her 'bye. Minnie Belle told her, "I'll try to do as good as you have with the children!"

## Carolyn's Journal

Ruth Ann and James rode off on their honeymoon, waving as they went. It was a sad parting for Ruth Ann, but she was happily married to James

The next morning all of us went to Union Landing with Demetrius, who was to bring the carriages back to Pine Grove. We all got onto the yacht to head for Boston and then England. We had to go by Boston to pick up mother as we went. Being on the yacht we could get in some much needed practice. We couldn't bother anyone out on the water.

One day when we were not practicing, I sat Earl down and told him that I was with child again. He looked at me and asked, "Are you sure?"

"Yes, I'm quite sure!"

"Maybe we ought to cancel this trip!"

"Since I don't work around the house anymore, I'll be all right. We will go on as planned. The children would be terribly disappointed if we don't go! You can call a doctor in England if something strange happens."

Nothing more was said about my condition.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Nineteen FIFTEEN IS ENOUGH!

We arrived in Boston and went to mother's. Father was happy to see us, especially the children. We stayed two days with mother and father, then mother and my family headed for England.

Mother told me, "I'm not sure that this business of you and the children singing with me is a good idea! You may not be received well."

"If we sing the first night and are not received well then we will quit and spend a vacation in England and Prussia," I remarked.

"We will see the first night. Now I need to know what you will be singing so I can accompany you on the harp."

I gave mother the songs we would be singing and she got the music and started practicing as soon as we got to the mansion in England. Meanwhile, I had the children sing for their grandmother. They really did great. Mother and father thought it was wonderful. Of course you realize that grandparents are prejudiced!

When we arrived at the mansion in England, Jeeves took Earl aside and told him something. Earl turned pale and came to me.

"What is wrong, darling?"

"It's mother! Let's get inside where we are away from the children for a minute."

We went inside and left the governesses, mother and father to get things off the carriages and into the house.

"Mother has taken a turn for the worse! She has gone back to the castle and hasn't been heard from since! I'm worried that she may have died over there and no one has known how to get in touch with me! I've got to check on her."

"I do hope nothing has happened to mother Herta! I love her as much as I do my own mother!"

"I'll go to the castle right away and if things are not good, I'll return for you and the children. She always called the children her medicine."

"You do that and I won't tell the children anything about it until after the performance. It would most certainly affect the way they do."

"You tell all of them when you feel it is best and I will go to the castle this evening."

That evening the children went to bed as usual. They asked where Earl was and I told them he had some business to tend to and would be back.

Everyone except me slept well. I kept thinking of Earl's safety and what might have happened to mother Herta.

The next evening we were to sing and mother to play the harp. The king was present and many other royal personages including Féodore, Suzie and Charles. The building was filled to capacity!

Suzie came to where we were and said, "There are a lot of people here who have come to hear the Singing O'Deigh's and Hilda play. You people will be great I'm sure. You always have been. Good luck."

## Carolyn's Journal

"Thank you, Suzie. I think we will need good luck. Mother has reservations about this."

"I think she is wrong about this. I've got to get back to my loge now with Charles."

Suzie left and we got mother on the stage for the opening numbers. When the audience saw mother seated at the harp, they applauded.

Mother stood and curtsied and announced her first piece. The audience hearkened waiting for her to begin. Mother sat down at the harp and began to play. When mother was finished, the audience applauded and requested more. Mother sat back down at the harp and began to play again. When she finished that piece, the audience called for more. Mother stood and hushed the audience and then told them that she had a special treat for them. Ten of her grandchildren and her daughter would now sing as she played.

I led the children out onto the stage beside mother. I had already gotten them in the order that I wanted them for singing. The audience watched quietly. Mother then plucked the opening chords and then we all began to sing as mother played. The children performed perfectly! They never missed a cue and everything went well. When we had finished the children all bowed or curtsied. The audience gave some applause, but not much. I whispered to mother, "I think you best play alone. They don't seem to care for our singing!"

Mother advised, "Sing one more song and if they do not respond better, you and the children best leave and sing no more."

We sang another song with mother and the response was not any better, so we marched off the stage. At intermission, Suzie came back to where we were and asked why we had stopped singing.

"Suzie, it was evident they did not appreciate us. They didn't applaud. They didn't do anything!"

"I'm certain that they appreciated your singing. It's just that they don't want it mixed with your mother's program. I believe the king is going to request you to sing at the palace for them. They enjoyed it anyway!"

"I don't know, Suzie. The children are pretty disappointed. They were sure everyone would love them."

"They do love them! They just don't want singing mixed with the harp."

"In that case, you tell the king that we will be glad to sing for him."

"Why don't you tell him? He is right here!"

The king came up to where I was. I curtsied and he said, "I enjoy hearing you and your children sing. You have lovely voices! Would you be interested in singing for the royal court?"

"We would be. When did you have in mind?"

"While you are here and before you and the Baron run off to America."

"Would you mind if we did it tomorrow?"

"That is kind of soon, but we can arrange it."

"I'm sorry to have to do it so soon, but I have a very good reason and all England will know the reason before long!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I am sorry to hear that you have a problem! I hope the Baron hasn't done something he shouldn't again!"

"It is nothing like that!"

"We shall see you tomorrow at the palace at say three."

"That will be fine!"

The king and Suzie left together. Suzie had come a long way from that hillbilly from southern Ohio. I am always proud to see any of my girls do so well!

The next day the children were all a twitter about getting to sing before the King of England! This was really big stuff! I mean BIG stuff to them! Knowing Erin, she was probably already thinking of what she was going to tell the children at school the next fall.

We sang as scheduled and we were appreciated by the royal court. The children were all excited from this event.

That evening Earl came back late and came to the mansion to tell me that we all would have to go back to Prussia with him. Mother Herta had taken a turn for the worse as we were coming to England and passed on.

I could see that Earl had been crying. He loved his mother and they were very close. His father wasn't as close because of the way he treated mother Herta. I really did feel sorry for Earl! I loved mother Herta too and I cried a little when he told me.

"What am I going to tell the children?"

"Just tell them the truth. Tell them that their grandmother Herta has died and gone to heaven. Just don't beat around the bush!"

I called the children, mother and father together and told them that mother Herta had gotten very sick and was now in heaven.

Erin wanted to know right away, "Does that mean that we will never get to go back to the castle?"

"No, dear. It just means that you will never see your grandmother Herta again."

"I loved her, mother. She was really nice to me and the rest of the family."

I noticed mother beginning to have one of her spells. I got one of her pills that I always carried when I am with mother. I gave her one of the pills and made her go to bed and lie down. We all went to bed that evening, some able to sleep better than others. I kept a close watch on mother so I didn't get too much rest. The next morning we had breakfast and boarded the yacht for the castle. We had made this crossing many times before, but this was probably the saddest.

Minnie Belle had never seen this part of the world, so she was all eyes. Every time she saw something she hadn't seen before, her eyes would get bigger and her mouth would fly open. She never said much, but she saw a lot. When we started up the Rhine, passed the windmills in Holland and came to the castles, I thought her mouth would fly off its hinges and her eyes pop out of her head! This was a strange world to her. I felt sorry for her, but I knew she was learning and seeing things she may never get to see again. This was one of the reasons I had

## Carolyn's Journal

taken her for a governess. She needed a broader education than she could get up on that hill outside Arabia!

When we got to the castle, the servants had put a wreath on the door. There were pennants flying from the masts on the spires. These pennants had black edges, so anyone who saw them would know that the death angel had visited that castle.

Mother had sent word to all her tour stops that she would be in mourning for Herta and not able to continue the tour. I kept a constant vigil on mother. She and Herta had been very close friends. Herta had been mother's close chum as a child growing up.

It was Herta who had taken care of the funeral for Aggy and child. It had been Herta who had found Inga dead and took care of all the arrangements for her interment. Now it was mother's turn to make arrangements with Earl for Herta's funeral and Interment.

Being a baroness, royalty of all kinds would be present for the funeral. Earl knew the protocol for such events, so mother and I let him do what he would.

The papers picked up on the death and ran long obituaries on the front page. I knew that she was a wonderful person, but I had no idea what all she had been into. The children were weeping some. They were certainly going to miss that grandmother! If I were a little cross with the children around her, she would always tell me, "Don't be hard on them! They are just excited!" She had been their mentor!

Earl wasn't showing it, but I knew he was taking it pretty hard. I could see that he had been crying. He loved his mother even though she was hard on him for getting messed up with Aggy that time. I was going to miss her even though she did hurt my feelings when she wondered if I had been messing with the Indians. Being Prussian, she had spoken her mind even if it did hurt me. She had asked me to forgive her and I had. That was the only time I ever really got angry with her.

Minnie Belle read an obituary in the paper about mother Herta and when she finished she looked at me and asked, "Did she really have all those names?"

"Yes, Minnie Belle, she had all of those names."

Minnie Belle thought for a minute and then said, "If I had to lug around all those names and titles, I believe it would have killed me a long time ago!"

I laughed at Minnie Belle.

I told her, "I guess now that she is gone, some of those titles will come to me."

Minnie Belle looked at me and said, "I hope you don't have all of them come to you!"

We all had to wear black to the funeral and the ladies had to wear black veils. This was a problem as we hadn't expected this, but we got it solved.

Mother came to me and said, "Someday I expect this will happen to me - the World's Greatest Harpist. As the Baroness Von Ribbonauff, you will probably have the same kind of funeral for me!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Mother! Don't even talk that way! I expect to have you and father for a long time yet!"

"You never can tell, dear! Just watch closely how it is done. I expect the best from you!"

"You are just plain silly, mother. I don't want to hear any more morbid talk like that - not for now anyway. Can we talk about what you are going to do to get this tour in?" I knew she had canceled her tour, but I wanted to get her mind on something besides the funeral.

"This tour is canceled! I will have no more tours for at least six months. At that time I can reschedule them. I guess that you know you will be in mourning for a year."

"How come?"

"She was your mother-in-law. You have to mourn for a year!"

"That is silly! I know that she wouldn't want us going around with long faces for a year!"

"Not us, dear. Just you!"

"Are you kidding me?"

"No! The daughter-in-law has to mourn for one year. The grandchildren mourn for six months. The son mourns for at least six months or a year depending on how long he wants to mourn."

"That just isn't fair! I have to mourn the longest and she is no blood relation to me!"

"That is the price you pay for all those titles you will pick up from her."

The funeral went nicely. All the ladies had gotten the black veils and the service was in Prussian, so I had no idea as to what was said, nor did the children! It was probably best that way. It kept the children from feeling worse. I know it did me!

After mother Herta's body had been interred next to her husband's, everyone left and the family was alone again.

Erin went to Earl and asked, "Father, can we take these veils off now? Mine bothers me!"

"Of course you can. The only time you have to wear them is when there is going to be company or you are going out somewhere."

"I'm sorry grandmother Herta died, father, but it was the will of God! There will be something better come to make you happy again!" Erin remarked

"Thank you! That sounds like someone else I know!" He reached down and picked Erin up and put her on his knee. He gave her a big hug and a kiss on the forehead.

She looked up at him and said, "If I had known I was going to get kissed by a handsome man, I would have cheered him up a long time ago!"

Earl looked at Erin and laughed. Then he kissed her again on the forehead. Erin looked at Earl in her most dignified manner and said, "That's enough, father! A young lady has to be dignified at all times!"

## Carolyn's Journal

Earl laughed and then tickled her ribs. Erin jumped down off Earl's knee and looked straight at him, "You surely do make it hard for a lady to be dignified!" Then she went marching off to her sisters.

This was what Earl needed and Erin was just the one to cheer him up. I could try, but I couldn't do the job Erin could. He really loved Erin. She had gotten close to his heart. He loved all the children, but Erin was special to him.

We stayed on at the castle for another week and got things fixed up that needed to be fixed up. Mother Herta was like me, a woman, had a title, but no property that had to be taken care of. Women were not allowed to have property unless it was willed to them. If they married again, the property then went automatically to the new husband!

By the end of the week, we were headed back to England. The children loved the old castle, but with mother Herta gone, it just wasn't the same.

Mother had taken the loss of Herta quite hard, but she only had the one spell with her heart. I didn't want to have to part with her just yet. Father watched over mother very closely. He had never seen her have one of her spells and this bothered him because she had never told him about them. He came to me for some of the pills the doctor had given me. I didn't have many left and was afraid she would need them while she was around me.

"I'll see if Earl remembers the doctor who gave me the pills and then maybe we can get some more."

"You see what you can do. I have needed them for years and didn't know it! She could have died in my arms and I wouldn't have been able to do anything for her!"

I saw Earl and asked him if he remembered the doctor. He did, so when we got to the mansion, he sent word by a servant to the doctor that we needed more of those pills. The servant returned with the doctor. The doctor recognized me and asked, "Is your mother having another spell with her heart?"

"Not now. She did have the other day. We are getting low on the pills and just need some for father to keep."

"She shouldn't be getting too many of these. You should only give her one of these if she has a problem. If it doesn't clear up the problem, don't give her more! Put her in bed and keep her there until you can get me!"

"Suppose we are in America."

"Get a local doctor and let him know what kind of pill you gave her. All you have to do is show him the pill box."

"Thank-you doctor. I appreciate this very much. I hope we don't have to give her any more!"

"You may have to, but keep her from receiving any sudden, strong surprises!"

Earl saw the doctor out and paid him for the pills and for coming. Father saw this and said to Earl, "I didn't expect you to pay the doctor. I am well able to do that. You tell me how much you paid him and I will pay you back."

## Carolyn's Journal

"It was my pleasure to be able to do that for you. It wasn't much and I love mother too. I guess you can let me have one time that I do something for her!"

"Very well, I do appreciate this and I will remember you for it."

We spent the rest of our time in England going sight seeing and shopping. By the end of the week we were all ready to go home again. This vacation was a sad one, but we managed to still enjoy it. I know Earl had a hard time with the loss of his mother, but the children and I worked very hard to cheer him and mother up. Whenever they would start to mention something about Herta, one of us would change the subject. The children were excellent at that. With fourteen children, one of them could always think of something to change the subject. We arrived back in Boston and stayed for three weeks this time. I wanted to be certain mother was going to be all right before I left.

One day I went back behind the barn to my old spot and sat on a rock and the animals began to come up for me to pet. The rock I used to sit on was gone. Chirp wasn't there anymore, but one of his descendants came and perched on the brim of my hat as chirp used to do. There was another deer that came up. It couldn't have been Buck. It had to be one of his descendants. Spot or one of his descendants came up to me. This all took me back to my childhood. I was sitting there on a rock petting and scratching the animals. Earl came to see what I was doing.

"I guess you know you have a skunk you are petting!"

"Yes, I know. Would you like to pet him?"

"I don't believe I would, if you don't mind. I think I would like to pet and scratch that deer."

"All you have to do is walk over slowly and he will let you pet and scratch him." He did as I told him and he started petting and scratching the deer.

In a few minutes, Erin came to see what her father and I were doing.

"Mother, can I pet some too?"

"If you come up slowly and don't look mean, they will let you pet them."

She came up slowly to the rabbit and started petting it. "This is fun mother. Do you suppose I can do this on my own?"

"I doubt it. This is something that only I can do. If you want to see if you can do it yourself, move over there away from me and see if they will come up to you."

She moved over and the animals didn't move over to her as they would to me.

"I guess they just won't come to me, mother!"

"I didn't think they would. You aren't the Great White Indian Princess!"

"I wish I was! I like to pet the animals."

"If that were all there was to it, I wouldn't mind it either. Now I want you to remember that you are not me and the animals don't come to you. If you come outside sometime and an animal comes to you, don't try to pet or scratch it. It could have a very bad disease that could kill you. It is an awful death, so don't ever be friendly with an animal on your own!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"I won't mother. I'll pet animals when you are around. That will be all right won't it?"

"Yes, that will be all right, Erin."

"May I come and pet the animals with you sometime?" Earl wanted to know.

"Of course, dear!" I laughed at him.

"Honey, why do you suppose they know to come to you and they know to avoid me?"

"I have no idea! How could that snake tell me from the Bodines? Why didn't it strike and maybe hit me?"

"That is peculiar isn't it?"

Earl grabbed me and gave me a big hug saying, "I never knew how much I was getting when I married you! You have not only made me happy, but you have done so many things to make others happy too! I'm thrilled that you agreed to marry me!" He leaned down and gave me a big kiss.

"I'm glad she is my mother! There are a whole lot of children whose parents don't care about them. Mother cares about all of us. All fourteen of us!"

"I can't imagine a mother giving birth to a child and not caring for it, but that does seem to happen!" I commented. "Joseph loved the children before he even saw them. He spent hours talking to my tummy before Erin here was born! If a father loves his children that much, how would he ever want to disregard them later?"

"All fathers are not that loving. Some just want to start children and that is all. They could care less about what happens to the children!" Earl was as serious about this as I have ever seen him.

"You are very serious about this aren't you?"

"Yes, I am. I hope Erin is learning something from this, because I would hate to see her have a child whose father didn't love it! If he doesn't love the children, chances are he doesn't love the one who bears them! Make certain, Erin, that the fellow you love really loves you also!"

"I will father."

When our little vacation was over in Boston, Earl, mother, the children and I all boarded the yacht for home. We pulled out of Boston harbor and headed south. We went around Florida and up the great Gulf of Mexico to the Mississippi River. We steamed up the Mississippi to the Ohio and then on up to Union Landing.

Bob and his family were spending the weekend in Hanging Rock so we borrowed two coaches and horses from him to drive back to Pine Grove. We would have to send the carriages back to Bob so he and his family could get back to Pine Grove Sunday Evening. We would send Demetrius and Rufus back with them.

Every summer we spend a short vacation in Prussia and England and then spend a short time with Mother and Father in Boston. Father enjoys his little workshop. He spends a lot of time in it. He says that he is wanting the triplets to get old enough so they can take over his business. The only one that seems

## Carolyn's Journal

interested in that is Richard. Father is teaching Richard all he can about the business so Richard can take it over when he gets old enough.

About a month after we had arrived back home, it was made clear to me that someone was wanting a better look at this big old world. I had made a birthing bed next to mine, as usual. Mother had come to be with me at this birth. In a while Earl and I had another member of the family. It was another boy. We decided to call him Kurt, after my grandfather. This was the last child I was allowed to have. I guess God thought that fifteen was enough!

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Twenty OUR CHILDREN

Earl always said that his title and business and property would all have to go to either Karl or Kurt because they were HIS children. This business of HIS children began to crop up more and more. I told Earl that all of the children were OUR children and that they were neither HIS nor MINE!

"You know what I mean, honey! You know I love them all, but there are certain things that are to be passed down through the family. As long as I have children that are yours and mine, they get those things that have to be passed down and not to a child not blood related!"

"I guess that is what you married me for! You just wanted blood line children! You really didn't care for me or the children!"

"Now that is not true! I married you and all of your children didn't I? Would I have done that if I just wanted bloodline children?"

"If you thought that was the only way you could get them, you might!"

"Carolyn, this is silly! I am not going to argue about this any more!"

"Fine! I expect you to talk about OUR children and not your children!"

We kissed and made up. We always had a ruling in the house that 'The sun never sets on your wrath'.

I knew that if Earl and I ever had a problem it would be over the children. I don't care who inherits what, they are still OUR children - not HIS and MINE!

Earl became more and more possessive of the children he and I had. He talked to them and told them of their Prussian Heritage. He played with them to the exclusion of the others. As the last children grew up, he instilled in them that they were Prussians - superior to all other races! I didn't like this and told him so.

One day I was going into Karl's room to gather up laundry for the maid to wash. Karl and his father were talking about something. Karl stopped talking to his father and shouted at me, "Get out of here! This is a private conversation!"

I looked at him and said, "Young man, if you don't want your clothes washed, that is one thing, but you do not shout at me! I am your mother!"

Earl looked at me and said so Karl could hear, "I don't want you to ever correct my children! I will do it!"

I bit my tongue and walked out of the room. That night I made a bed for Earl in another room and told him where he could find it. I never went into Karl's room again. If Karl's clothes weren't where they were supposed to be to get washed, they didn't get washed.

One day Karl came to me complaining that he didn't have anything clean to wear. I told him, "Maybe if you put them where they should be they would get washed! It seems to me that a super race should be able to figure that out!"

"Father told you that you were not to correct any of his children anymore. You are trying to by this action!"

"No, son. I am trying to get the clothes in the proper place that need washing. If you are too lazy to do that, then go without!"

## Carolyn's Journal

He left me and went straight to Earl. Earl came to me and asked, "Why are you harassing Karl?"

"I am not. He is harassing me! Now I want you to listen to me, Earl." I looked in his eyes, "You have been allowing Karl, Inga and Kurt to do as they want. You are not giving them any guidance or correction. You have told them that I am not to correct them and you said it in front of Karl. Now he knows you don't want me to correct him. With this super race garbage that you have put in their minds, they think they don't have to listen to me - their birth mother. The other day the sheriff brought Karl home from the store because he was stealing things! Kurt has been following suit. The way they are going they will be no better than the Bodine boys!"

"Being you do not want me to correct them and insist on letting them do as they want, I don't want you or your children around me! I thought you might wake up when I put you in another bedroom and wouldn't let you sleep with me, but you haven't been able to figure that out."

"You told me when we married that you loved me and always would. You certainly haven't shown anything that looks like love in a long time. I have worked all of my life to have a good reputation for myself and my children, but you deny me the right to help, as you put it, 'YOUR' children gain a good reputation!"

"You apparently don't love me and make me wonder if you ever have. I think all you have wanted from the very beginning was a trophy to hang and a woman to give you an heir!"

"The only thing that keeps me from turning my animals loose on you is the fact that I do love you and the children. I cannot and will not be sassed and talked down to by a bunch of ignorant Prussians who think they are superior, when in reality they can't tell which end of the baby to put the diaper on! I want you to get your three super beings packed, onto your yacht and take them back to Prussia or England or where ever you want. None of you will stay another night in MY house!"

"Honey! You don't mean that!"

"I do mean it and if you aren't out of here by sundown, I'll call the sheriff to move you out!"

"I really do love you! You know I do. You are just angry now. I'll speak to Karl and the rest of my children and get them to back off."

"You are right! You will speak to them and you will tell them to pack their duds because they are going to live with you in Prussia!"

"Please don't make me do this. I'll do better and I'll see that the children do too!"

"Not good enough, big boy! I have given you all the lee way I am going to! If you want to prove to me your intentions have changed, then you can prove it by the way the children behave in Prussia. Now get your things packed and out of my sight! Now!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Very well! I guess you know that I will not pay you anything for support! You will have to go to work or do something on your own to support this place!"

"I figured you would pull some dumb stunt like that, so I have made other arrangements! Your mother always said you went stupid at times."

"We will be gone by evening!"

"That suits me fine! I'm sorry I spent so many years with a man who down deep really didn't love me!" After I said that I burst into tears and ran to my bedroom so I could cry in private. I really did love Earl, but somehow he didn't seem to care about me. Apparently all he ever wanted was an heir!

That evening at dinner, I couldn't eat! I thought my heart would break. How could I have been so blind as to think I ever loved him and he loved me?

The children who were still home saw that I was very upset. Shannon looked at me and asked, "Did you kick the Prussians out?"

"What do you mean?"

"Inga came into my room as I was chatting with Colleen and told us that they were all going to have to go back to Prussia. She said that you had kicked Father and the three of them out!"

"That is about it! I have had all the Prussian super race that I can stand! They are in the wrong country!"

"I don't blame you, mother. I would have sent them packing sooner if it had been me!" Colleen was trying to comfort me.

"I don't want you boys and girls to ever feel any animosity for your brothers and sister. Earl doesn't know doodley-squat about rearing children and he thinks he does. It is not the children's fault - it is their father's. Let's eat now. Peter would you return thanks for us?"

"I'll be happy to mother. Could we all hold hands tonight? We must stand together in this."

He returned thanks and did very well. I thanked God for my children having turned out well. Most of my children were young ladies and gentlemen. I was proud of them. Some had gotten married and moved away. Erin had married her Pete. The triplets were off to college. Hilda and Herta were both married. Strange as it seems I am now a grandmother. I try awfully hard to spoil my grandchildren when I see them. The quads and the last set of Joseph's and my twins were all home yet, but it looked like I had lost the last three entirely - along with a husband!

Colleen came to me one day after Earl and his children left and wanted to talk. I sat down with her.

"Mother, you made Earl take his three children with him. You didn't ask them if they wanted to go. I think Inga would have stayed and listened to you. She wasn't really bad."

"You may be right Colleen, but from what I saw, she was headed just like Karl!" "If she promised to mind and do as you want, could you let her come back?"

"I would if she meant it! I've had all of this super race junk I can stand!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Thank you, mother. I can't stand the super race either!"

That ended that conversation and I went on about my business as did Colleen. What I didn't know was that Colleen had been writing to Inga. Inga had let her know that she wanted to come back and be a part of the family.

I received a letter from mother one day asking what was going on with Earl and why I had to have money from father when I had a husband. I sat down and wrote a letter back and told her all the sordid details.

Mother wrote that she was sorry about this and that she would have done the same thing. Mother said she couldn't understand where he got the notion that Prussians were a super race. She said that she didn't know of any Prussian in Prussia that felt that way! He was just starting something apparently.

At the end of the month, I heard a knock at the door. Rufus was off so I answered the door. I opened the door and there stood Inga!

"Mother I love you and I will obey and do as you want, if you will take me back!"

"Did your father put you up to this?"

"No, mother. I miss my brothers and sisters and I know that you just want us to do right and respect you!"

"If you mean that, Inga, you may come in and join the family. If you don't, back you go!"

"I do mean it mother. Do you know that father has been looking for a man for me to marry? He doesn't want his daughter marrying out of the super race!"

"That is absolutely barbaric! I'm glad you came back to me. I believe I can still help you!"

"As I told you before, I love you. You are my birth mother and the smartest mother around!"

"Now you are trying to butter me up. I'll get Peter and Paul to help you with your luggage. You can have your old room back."

The next day I got a bundle of letters from Earl. He apparently had written a letter each day and sent them on to me. Since the boats only go occasionally, the letters were all bundled together. He promised to do better, if I would just let him come home. He had put the boys in a Prussian Military School and I would not have to worry about them anymore. I wrote back that he still had not come to understand the problem and to stay where he was.

During the next month, I heard a knock on the door. Rufus answered it and there stood super dummy himself!

"Please let me come back! I promise I'll change! I do love you and I miss you!"

"Where are the boys, your super race?"

"Didn't you get my letters? I have been writing to you each day!"

"I have! I see nothing in those letters that shows me that you have changed! Do you think a Prussian Military School is going to let you correct YOUR boys?"

"That is why they are there - so they can be disciplined!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"Why do you let them discipline them when you told me in front of Karl that you would discipline them?"

"I know they need discipline and I can't do it!"

"You finally admit that you can't discipline them? You didn't want me to discipline them and yet you will let strangers do it!"

"They are my boys and if I want to turn the disciplining over to a stranger, I will!"

"You still haven't learned have you? You may just as well turn around and head back to Prussia! Maybe you will learn if you stay over there long enough!"

"I guess I don't understand yet."

He turned and left the house. I didn't hear from him again for some time. I thought that maybe he was trying to sort things out so he could understand the problem. That always took him a while. I did miss him and I do love him, but I am not going to be a slave in my own house!

About two weeks after the time Earl went back, I heard a knock at the door. Rufus answered the door and there stood Kurt!

"Mother, I would like to come home. May I please?"

"Did your father put you up to this?"

"No he didn't. I was in the Military School and I haven't even seen him. I believe father is wrong and you are right."

"Do you think you can do as I ask and treat your brothers and sisters as your brothers and sisters?"

"I think so and I will try really hard. I can't stand this thing that is going on between you and father. I want you two back together and all of us one big happy family!"

"You just said the magic word. Come in and take your things up to your room. Dinner is on the table."

I hadn't won anything with Earl, but the children had better sense than he did! In another month I heard a knock on the door. It was Earl! He was beside himself! He started babbling something about Kurt.

"Kurt has left the Military School and they have no idea as to his whereabouts! He could be lost or dead! I don't know where to look!"

"Calm down Earl! He left the school so he could come home. He has agreed that he is going to change so he can be part of the family. So far he has been doing well and trying hard! Inga came back several months ago."

"You mean you have two of my children here and you haven't even bothered to let me know?"

"I thought that you knew! According to you they are YOUR children and consequently, you should know their whereabouts at all times. What are you doing over there? Playing around with another woman?"

"That is unfair! You know I wouldn't do that."

"Then why don't you know where your children are? Any good parent knows where their children are if they love them."

## Carolyn's Journal

"I had the two boys in school and supposed they would stay there. May I see my two children you have managed to get to come back?"

"Of course! Then you can get on your little-ole' yacht and go back to Prussia before you lose your last child!"

I called Inga and Kurt down to see their father. He looked at them and asked, "Why have you two left me and come back here?"

Inga told him plain that she didn't like what he was trying to do to her. She told him that she wasn't going to be the mother of a supposed super race. Besides that she loved it in America.

"Your mother didn't entice you in some way?"

"No, father. You put me into that school and I came to realize that what you had taught us about the Prussians being a super race was a big lie! The people in school questioned me at length about that idea. They told me that while there were a few like you who teach that rubbish, the most of the Prussian population does not teach it or espouse it! I came back here because I want to do right and have a chance to be somebody!"

I was proud of Kurt for telling his father this. Maybe it would sink in sometime!

In about a month after Kurt arrived on my doorstep, I found Karl there. High and mighty Karl!

"What did you come back for? To pick up your dirty laundry and insult and abuse your mother?"

"I deserve that mother and I am sorry. I really am! Can you feel it in your heart to forgive me for being a dumb ox?"

"That depends on whose ox you are and why you are here."

"I came to ask your forgiveness and if you would take me back and help me become an honorable man?"

"Do you really mean that or are you putting on a show that you and your father have rehearsed?"

"Father doesn't know that I am here. He thinks I am in Military School. Can you forgive me, mother?"

"Are you willing to work hard to become that honorable man you said you wanted to be?"

"I will, mother, if you don't send me back to Prussia. I don't like it there. I want to be a part of our family here in America! I have a greater opportunities here!"

"All right then, I will let you come back, but if you revert to your old self, it's back to Prussia for good!"

He came up to me and gave me a big hug and a kiss on the cheek and then he started to cry on my shoulder. He said, "I have the best mother, the most concerned mother and the smartest mother and I almost gave that all away!"

He sobbed on my shoulder for several minutes. He had that all pent up in him and now it was coming out. I now had all three of my last children home and they wanted to be part of the family - not my family and not Earl's family, but a

## Carolyn's Journal

part of THE family. They had been able to see the problem and came home. Old super race Earl couldn't see the problem even when his children were all back in the nest!

Earl came back over when the authorities were though questioning him and realized he was a harmless crack pot. He knocked at the door. When I answered the door he asked, "May I see my children?"

"You may, but you go back to Prussia. You still haven't learned what your children have. Maybe they could educate you!"

I called the children down to see their father. They all sat and chatted for a while and then Earl got up and left. I hated to see him leave. I loved him so much, but he still hadn't learned. As long as he was unchanged, I didn't want him around the children who were working hard to over come his poor teachings.

He apparently didn't leave this time. He went to see Bob who came right out and told him that those were not HIS children. They were both of ours. If Earl ever wanted to come back to me and the family, he was going to have to change. He would have to learn not to differentiate between the children and treat them alike! He told him that I should have just as much right to discipline one of the children as he does! Earl went back to his yacht and spent the night. The next morning he got up early and came to the house. He knocked on the door and when I saw who it was, I asked, "Why are you here? I thought that you were on your way to Prussia and your super race!"

"I stopped by to see Bob last night and he told me what I have been doing wrong. Will you forgive a stupid old Prussian who can't tell what is wrong when it pounds him on the head?"

"I might if you can tell me what is wrong!"

"I have been trying to rear Karl, Inga and Kurt by myself in exclusion to the other twelve. I really did botch that up! The others are part of the family too. This is OUR family, not mine and not yours but OURS. I guess that I just about ruined this nice family we have through my ignorance. I deserve to be sent into exile for that. I promise to do better and if I don't you can send me back to Prussia!"

"It certainly took a lot of trips to Prussia for you to learn this, didn't it? Your children figured it out and came back. How about this super race business that you have espoused for several years?"

"If you let me come back I shall never mention that again."

"The question is whether you still believe it or not. Are you going to be secretly teaching that to the children?"

"That is all over! I don't know what got into me. It took me a lot of trips to learn this and nearly depleted my wood supply on the yacht. If I leave with it that way, I would get to Prussia but couldn't return!"

I stretched out my arms and said, "Come here you big, bumbling ignoramus!" He came to me and I grabbed him and cried a little on his shoulder. He cried a little on my shoulder too. We kissed and made up. What a load had

## Carolyn's Journal

been taken from my shoulders by this and I know that it had been a load to him also.

I looked at him and asked, "Why is it that when you make a mistake it always has to be such a big one?"

He looked at me with a faint trace of a smile on his face as he remarked, "For some people it just comes natural, I guess!"

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Twenty One THE LAST DAYS

Some of the most enjoyable and memorable times I have had has been when my older children could all sing with me at church or at the End of the Harvest Festival. We enjoyed singing so much that we often sang when we were at home alone. We were just a large happy family!

The younger children soon got old enough to sing with the group and that made us a choir. Some of the children in the community who liked to sing came to me and wanted to know if they could join our choir. I took the ones who could sing well into our group, so now the church had a choir and no choir loft!

Some of my children got a little upset because they were not a special group now. The result was that I worked up a little program for just my children. Erin had grown to the age of 14 and looked exactly like me. I worked with Erin to mirror everything I did. When Erin and I got our mirroring down well enough, I taught the children to sing at certain times as Erin and I sang and mirrored.

Earl and the older boys made a framework of wood that looked like the frame of a mirror. I sat on one side of the "mirror" and Erin sat on the other side facing me and she did everything I did except opposite.

The first time we performed this at the End of the Harvest Festival, the audience loved it and asked for more. We had practiced another routine, so we went through it. The audience loved that one also. I didn't hear any more complaints from my children about not having something of their own.

Some people might get the idea that my children never had disagreements. With fifteen children and some of them twins, triplets or quads, they could always find something to quarrel about or they would tease one another. The triplets were always teasing Erin. One day Erin was doing the ironing when the triplets started in on her. She told them to leave her alone, but they kept on. She never said anything further. She picked up one of the cold irons she was getting ready to heat and started after the boys. They thought the iron to be hot and ran. She chased them out of the kitchen. They ran so fast that they were tripping over one another. Erin laughed with glee. I guess that they thought that she was going to burn them. She laughed many times after that about the incident. She told of the incident to the whole family one day in the living room. Everyone got a laugh out of that. All the boys would say was, "How were we going to tell that it wasn't hot?"

The triplets would play tricks on the other children as well as their own brothers and sisters. The triplets were so bad about pretending they were one of the other triplets that some of the people in town began to call them the "Tricksters." I have found that whoever said twins were double trouble needed to have triplets, quadruplets and several sets of twins. They would have to revise their thinking. My children did not do bad things. They were just mischievous.

If anyone thinks I haven't had my share of runny noses or grippe or some other sickness, they just don't know the privilege of having multiple birth

## Carolyn's Journal

children! When there are twelve children all under the age of seven, one is always catching some disease and giving it to the others. My governesses and I were kept busy at times!

When Little Earl was old enough to learn to sing, I did my best to get him to learn or at least try. He would not sing! One day I told him, "Everyone knows that all the O'Deigh's can sing."

He looked at me with those little innocent eyes of his that would melt cold butter and remarked, "Well, this one doesn't!"

I looked at him and said, "Well, I guess you will just have to stay home with your father while the rest of us sing for the Queen of England next summer!"

He looked at me with his eyes opened wide and asked, "We are supposed to sing for the Queen of England next summer?"

"I thought you weren't part of the group and were not going to learn to sing. The others and I are going to sing for the Queen, but being you do not want to sing you are going to have to stay here with your father!"

"Mother, for that I will learn to sing!"

"I don't know if I can teach you by the time we are ready to go. I can't be bothered with anyone who will not try!"

Little Earl's eyes filled with tears as he remarked, "I will try real hard, mother, if you will just help me."

Needless to say I had no more problems with Earl learning to sing. He began to sing and took to it like a bird does to wing. I could hear him singing when he was doing his chores and at other times. That O'Deigh could sing!

During the following summer that Erin and I had begun our mirroring routine, the family spent time in England and Prussia. When we returned to Pine Grove, we discovered that there was a new Iron Master at the furnace. He had a very handsome son who was beset by the young girls of Pine Grove trying to get his attention.

It came around time for the End of the Harvest Festival, so Erin and I practiced our routines and I practiced the other children in the songs they were to sing. I got the church choir practiced and was ready for the festival.

The night of the festival, I made certain that all of the children were ready and that the Baron was ready also. We went to the schoolhouse and as I walked in with the children a strange man came up to me and asked me to come with him. I wasn't certain what was about to happen, but I followed him.

He took me to a quiet corner of the room and then stated, "I have been afforded some honors in my life, but no one could ever have predicted I would be Iron Master to a furnace that had the Most Beautiful Lady in the World in the community. You have been my heroine for years!"

I looked at him and remarked, "You should never believe all you hear. What makes you think I am the person you mentioned?"

"I have no doubts. I have read everything about you that I have been able to locate. In that material have been likenesses of you. You are the one all right!"

## Carolyn's Journal

"If you have done all of that reading about me, then you know that I am happily married with fifteen children."

"I know that. I just want you to know that I think it is an honor for me to have you in the community."

Erin, who was always at my side, came up just as he made his last statement. He looked at her and commented, "I believe that this young lady could only be your equally beautiful daughter for she looks just like you."

"You have that right." I introduced Erin to the Iron Master.

He looked about the room, "I would like for you two to meet my son." He had no trouble finding his son for all the girls were ganged around him. The Iron Master motioned for his son to come to him. His son obediently came as soon as he saw his father.

"Thanks, Dad for rescuing me from those crazy girls. What did you want?"

"I want you to meet these two ladies. You have heard me tell about the Most Beautiful Lady in the World. This is that person and this is her beautiful daughter, Erin."

These two youngsters looked at each other with their mouths agape and just stared. They had gone "ga ga" over each other. Their hearts had jumped into their throats and they couldn't talk. I told Erin to close her mouth or he would think her a child. She closed it, but still stared at Pete.

I remarked to the Iron Master, "I guess we will just have to get used to being in-laws."

He looked at me and confirmed my statement.

Pete began to court Erin and he was such a nice boy. He seemed to adore Erin and she certainly did him. She couldn't say two sentences without mentioning Pete in some way.

Erin had always been underfoot somehow as she grew up, but as she got older she would come to me and ask questions. She came one day wanting to know how she could tell if she were really in love. Another time she wanted to know what it was like to be married. I always sat down with her and took time to tell her what she needed to know. I never turned her away or told her wrong and she appreciated that.

Things were getting quite serious between the two of them and we expected Pete would propose during the Christmas Holidays, but he didn't. He asked for her hand in marriage on New Year's Eve just as Joseph had. Everyone there was happy about the proposal including me, but it reminded me of Joseph and I had to go to my room for a little cry.

Earl came in to see why I had left the group and I told him. He looked at me and said, "You never will forget him will you?"

Erin was so happy that she was going around singing songs that she made up. I couldn't help but wonder if I had been the same way when I was engaged to Joseph.

## Carolyn's Journal

The wedding was set for June after Erin was sixteen. I told her that she couldn't get married before that because it was too much of a burden on her body to bear children at a younger age. Sixteen was almost too young. I should know.

Mother and father came for the wedding as did my old friend Féodore. There was no way Suzie and Charles would stay away. She had been Erin's governess and she also wanted to show off her brood. She now had five children of her own. She was as proud of her family as I have always been of mine.

Féodore considered my children as being her nieces and nephews. For this reason she wouldn't miss Erin's wedding.

Erin's wedding was beautiful and there were a lot of sad girls in Pine Grove that day. Some of them had secretly hoped Erin and Pete would break up.

Erin and Pete stayed with us until they could find a place of their own. It wasn't too long before they found a nice home. It was made of brick and two story. I thought it a very nice place for them. They would rent it and if they decided to buy they had first option.

The day Erin moved out I sat in the living room and cried. I missed her being continually underfoot and her usual barrage of questions.

Earl came in and saw me crying and ask why I was crying now.

"I miss Erin."

"You don't have to worry about losing her. She will be back here tomorrow asking you all kinds of questions."

Earl was right for a change. The next day Erin was back at the house asking me all kinds of questions. This went on for a while and then one day she announced to all that she was with child. Questions really came flying at me then.

Earl just looked at me, smiled and reminded me, "What did I tell you?"

When Erin's baby was to be born, mother came out to be the midwife. She wanted to be able to brag to her friends that she had been the midwife for most of her grandchildren and was now the midwife for her first great grandchild!

The day came for the birth of the baby and when it was born and mother had the child in her hands, she looked at the baby and exclaimed, "I swanny! Another Great White Indian Princess. That child looks just like you and Erin. What are we doing? Starting a dynasty of Princesses?"

I laughed at mother and Erin laughed also. Mother never was completely convinced that I am the Indian Princess.

The triplets were all three in Latin School getting ready to go to college. Father is looking for one of the boys to take over his business soon, so he can retire. Father plans to spend some time with me and the children that are still home and of course he will spend time with his great grandchildren spoiling them the best he can, if I don't spoil them first!

My children are soon all going to be gone from the nest.

I asked Earl one day, "Are you ready to sit on the porch and rock in the rockers?"

"What in the world do you mean?"

## Carolyn's Journal

"It won't be too long and all of our children will be gone and it will just be you and me."

"I wouldn't worry about it too much. That is what life is all about. We grow up, get married and have children and then they grow up and have children. We are just a cog in the wheel of life."

"I guess that you are right, but that makes it all sound so mechanical or something. That leaves out all of the happy times, the laughter and the love. Of course there are sad times to go with the happy times. I think the Lord puts them in there to make us enjoy the happy times more."

"I bow to your great wisdom, Oh Great White Princess!" With that Earl stood, bowed to me and left the room.

I began to get the feeling that I was not going to be around much longer. I felt like the Lord was planning to take me home soon. I never felt that way before, so I went to George and talked with him. He concurred with me and reminded me that God had planned my life of servitude to him long before I was ever conceived and there would be little I could do to change those plans.

Never the less I went home and got on my knees by my bed and reminded the Lord that I had tried to do everything he wanted done as he would have it done. I asked him to give me time enough to see all of my children happily married. I heard no voice, but I did get the feeling that he was extending my time.

I got up and went to Earl and gave him a big kiss. He was surprised and asked, "What have you been doing now? I know that you are up to something and you are being sneaky about it as usual."

"I am not! Can't a wife kiss her husband?"

"That is the way you do when you are trying to sneak something by me!"

"Not this time, dear husband! I kissed you because I love you."

I went to all of my children close by and hugged them and assured them that I love them. I wrote to all of my children that were farther away and assured them of my love for them.

This caused all of the children to get suspicious of me and wonder what the reason was for all of this assurance. They all came to the house to see if I had lost my senses. Hilda looked at me and said, "Mother, I don't know what this is all about, but I do know that we were all brought up in a house full of love. You don't have to reassure us of that! Has George been telling you something again?"

"I just have a feeling that I will be taken from you soon and I just want you all to know that I do and always have loved you."

Colleen spoke up, "That is a fear that you will not have to worry about. Being the Great White Princess you will probably live to be one hundred!"

"I wish you folks were right."

"Now Carolyn, I am not going to put up with you going morbid on me! You have always looked to the bright side of everything and I don't want you to change now." Earl was quite pointed in his statement.

## Carolyn's Journal

I let that end there and did all I could to assure my love for my family without telling them. One day I wrote to all of my children and informed them that if anything did happen to me, they were to come by the house and take what they wanted of mine. The only exception was that Peter was to get the house so he could take it down piece by piece and rebuild it on his land in Kentucky.

In a few years the children were all gone and happily married. They didn't all marry the one I would have had them marry, but then they were the ones who needed to be concerned, not me. I was happy for them and quite proud the way my children had turned out. I never had any more trouble with the three last children after I got Earl's head on straight.

I have several grandchildren now and I know that they are the prettiest and smartest children in the world and I am their grandma with a right to be prejudiced!

Karl was the only one of my children that wasn't married. He had come to love me and respect me so much that he was not going to marry unless he could find someone just like me. I guess he didn't realize that the only ones like me were his older sister and niece. If he was ever going to marry, he was going to have to lower his sights a little.

One fall day Carolyn had gone through the house and through the kitchen to the swing that was in a grape arbor by the garden. She was sitting in the swing petting her animals. Carolyn came here to get away from others in the house, to reflect on her life and to wonder if she had done all of the things expected of her.

In a few minutes Earl came through the house hunting for Carolyn. He was going to have to go to Cincinnati on business and wanted to ask Carolyn if she wished to go with him.

Earl asked Liza if she had seen Carolyn. Liza looked at Earl, "She done come through here a while ago, but I ain't seen her since, Mistuh Earl."

Earl went to the kitchen door and out to the arbor looking for Carolyn. The swing was swinging, but there was no one there. He went back into the house and instructed Liza, "I can't find her. She must have gone down to the iron master or the store. When she returns, would you please have her read the note I have left for her on her desk."

"Ah shore will, Mistuh Earl."

Earl went into the living room and wrote a note to Carolyn and left it on her desk. He then took his overnight bag and left the house for the Yacht at Union Landing.

The next day when he returned he was met at the door by the sheriff. Earl looked at the sheriff, "What is the problem? Has one of our children gotten into some kind of trouble?"

"I think you better sit while I tell you this."

Earl sat in one of the rockers that lined the porch. The sheriff began, "Carolyn seems to be missing. We have search parties out looking for her. We have looked all around the house and have turned up no leads. I would

## Carolyn's Journal

appreciate it if you would contact all of your people in case she has gone to one of them."

"I will contact them, but are you sure that she has not gone on some Indian business with George?"

"She is not with George because he is helping us with the search."

"She wouldn't have gone visiting any of the children without asking me if I wanted to go with her. We always do that now that the children are all gone."

"I don't want to insult you or anything, but just so I have the record straight, where have you been?"

"I was in Cincinnati on business. There are any number of people who can vouch for me."

"I'm sorry Earl, but I have to check out everything."

Earl began to weep and remarked that he had always loved Carolyn and would never do anything to hurt her.

Several of the family began to come in when they got word that Carolyn was missing. They all did what they could to console their father for he was beside himself with grief. Most of them were in similar moods.

The sheriff in the meantime notified all sheriffs along both sides of the Ohio River to be on the watch for a body.

One sheriff found a body, but when it was identified it was not Carolyn.

The search for Carolyn became the biggest thing that had happened in that part of Ohio. People in England who were Carolyn's friends started a search there to make certain that Carolyn had not taken off for England to visit friends.

Carolyn's mother and father looked in places in and around Boston that Carolyn might have visited.

People in and around the castle in Prussia searched the castle for Carolyn and all places she might visit.

Being the Baroness Von Ribbonauff, searches were conducted every where she might have gone. At the end of the month the search was called off.

All of Carolyn's children had arrived at the Big House on the Hill. They began to divide the things that they wanted of Carolyn's. They packed the things they wanted into barrels to put on wagons for shipment.

Most of the Indian jewelry was given to Colleen, Hilda and Herta. The necklace and tiara that Earl's mother had given to Carolyn were given to Erin.

They had all worked hard to pack things and to clean the house. They were tired and ready for bed when they heard an angry mob at the door. This mob was very angry and came with clubs and guns. They banged on the door.

Rufus was off for the evening, so Earl went to the door. The leader of the mob ordered Earl to come out of the house and close the door. Earl did this and the leader of the mob grabbed Earl and rushed him to the big tree in the yard.

The rest of the mob had taken a rope and placed it over a limb of the tree. They were ready to lynch Earl without a trial!

The leader of the mob then said, "We believe that you have killed Carolyn and we intend to have retribution. What do you have to say before we do this?"

## Carolyn's Journal

Earl looked out over the crowd and said in plain and simple words that all might understand, "I have always loved Carolyn. I fell in love with her the first time I saw her. I have always treated Carolyn as I would want to be treated. I could never have done what you have accused me of doing. I would love to look out there and see her standing there." Earl began to weep.

At this point all of the children burst out into the yard and formed a double ring around Earl. The stronger boys were in a small ring around Earl and the girls and weaker boys were in the outer circle around Earl. The children had shoved the mob aside to make the circles.

Erin, who always spoke for the group, spoke up, "I am certain mother would appreciate this show of love you have shown for her tonight. You believe father is a murderer and you want to have vengeance. This is not what mother always taught you. Mother always taught what the Bible says; 'Vengeance is mine sayeth the Lord'. Mother always told you that her's was a mission of peace. She taught all of us to love our neighbor as ourself. She would be greatly disappointed and feel that she had failed in all the years she has worked with you. I beg of you to think of what you are about to do. This is not what mother would have you do! Now I would like to sing a song mother taught me. It was the first song she taught me. She taught this same song to all the others as they were old enough to sing. I think it best sums up the way mother felt and what she taught."

Erin began to sing the song and as she sang the other children all began to sing with her. When they finished the song, the children and Earl were all that were left under the tree. Peter went over and cut the rope from the tree. Richard and Joey helped their father down from the chair he was on and removed the rope from his neck. Then they untied his hands.

As soon as Earl was free he went directly to Erin and gave her a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. With tears in his eyes he remarked, "Your mother would be proud of you! You are indeed a carbon copy of your mother! I pray that God will bless you and your family real good!"

"What about the rest of us? Don't we get any credit?" Kurt laughed.

"You all are the greatest family. I am proud of all of you. I don't know how Carolyn did it, but you all are the best family any parent could ever want." With this Earl gave them all a group hug as he had when they were all little.

The next day the children and Earl worked to get the house emptied and cleaned, so Peter could disassemble it.

When everything was all packed and carried to the wagons for shipping, the family stood in the living room and bid each other a tearful good bye for the last time. The chances of their ever being able to come together again as a family were very slim for they all had their own families and some lived a long way from Pine Grove. Their father would be in England and Prussia. The others were scattered all across the US. They gave each other one last hug and went to their wagons and headed out. Most of them in tears.

## Carolyn's Journal

They all knew that all the singing, laughter and love was not unique to the Big House on the Hill. That was something they had in there very being! No one would ever be able to tear that down and haul it off to Kentucky!

Once they were all gone, Peter hired a crew to start dismantling the house. The people of Pine Grove figured that they might as well forget about Carolyn and her family. Carolyn would probably be relegated to a name on someone's genealogy page as a mother of fifteen. That would probably be all. No one would remember her, the big house on the hill or the good things she did.

There has never been a discovery made or any substantial evidence as to what happened to Carolyn. In later years there was an Indian princess proclaimed in the west. Some thought it could possibly be Carolyn, but closer scrutiny did not verify it.

A similar fate would be awarded the charcoal furnaces of the region. The area soon would no longer be the Iron Capital of America and would become known for its hard working, industrious people. The area would be forgotten by historians.

## Carolyn's Journal

### Chapter Twenty-Two A LETTER TO SUZIE

The second year that Suzie was married, her father and mother took lessons from the school teacher to learn to read and write. They learned to read and write in order to communicate with Suzie. Carolyn had asked them to let her teach them, but they would not have that. Their remark to Carolyn was that she had already done too much for them and they didn't want to burden her any further.

They both had a change of heart concerning Suzie and Carolyn. Carolyn had worked hard to include them in all of Suzie's decisions even though she was not required to do so. With this change of outlook, Suzie's parents, her father in particular, changed their minds and wanted to go to England to see Suzie and her baby, but they knew they were too much of a hill billy to be accepted in the social circles in which Suzie now found herself.

Suzie's father wrote Suzie a letter as soon as he was able.

*Dear Suzie,*

*Ah knows that this be a sooprize ta ya. Me ritin' ya an all. Momma an ah went ta tha perfessor at skool 'n he larned us ta reed 'n rite. He garenteed us he cud larn us ta reed 'n rite so we cud rite ya all. When Mr. Bob found out ah cud reed 'n write he dun made me blower. Now ah tells others whut ta do. It dun tuk tha perfessor longer ta larn us than he thot 'cause we had a time larnin' whut curley que ment whut letter. Ah think he done larned us reel gud, don' ya all?*

*Suzie yer mamma and me wants ya all ta know that we luv ya all an' are proud o' ya all. Ya dun what yer grampa, rest his soul, al'ays tol ya, marry tha feller ya all luvs but be shore he has money. Ya all did gud that away 'n ah knows ya cudn't a dun 't with out Miss Carelin's hep. People heer 'bouts shore do luv her fer her werk. Yer momma shudn't autta dun whut she dun when she beet ya, but it turnt out fer tha best. Sometimes God has ta shake us by tha scruff o' tha neck to git ar 'tention.*

*Me 'n yer mamma air wukin' on ar manners so's we kin cum see ya all. We wanta see that new granchile o' ourn.*

*Ah bin goin' with Mr. Bob ta sum kinda club 'n he bin tryin' ta larn me manners. Tha fust day ah went with Mr. Bob he done dooded me up in fancy clos. We went in tha front dor ta this heer place 'n sum big mouthed fellar yelled ta tha others inside ar names. All tha others got up 'n came ta greet us. They all wanted ta no whar I wuz frum. I tol them Virginny. We all sat a spell an tahked 'til thet big mouth feller cum ta tha door 'n yelled, "Lunch is served." He shuda yelled krunch is served. All they wuz ta eat war itty bitty pieces 'o hard sody crakers with sum kinda chees 'tween. I et a hole bunch o' em afor I cud get 'nuff. They had some limey tea whut wer so week ya hada drink to afor ya new ya ha' one. Ar water 'n Virginny was*

## Carolyn's Journal

stronger 'n thet. Ater lunch-krunch weuns went inta 'nother room ta play sum kinda game. Thay call it bilyards. Mr. Bob tole me ah need ta no how ta play this game.

They had this big flat table in tha middle o' tha room. It had a soft green cloth strecht tite o'r tha top. Thar war a hol in each corner 'n one on each side. Thay put tha leetle balls in tha middle o' tha table, all but one, in a trisquare. Tha balls ar different colors wif numbers on 'em an ya hafta hit tha white one with tha end o' a skinny stick. Tha white ball is called a ku ball 'n tha stick is called tha ku stick. Thet ku stick air as smooth as ary a baby's behind. It air also strat as airy an arrow. When ya play ya hafta hit tha ku ball 'n make it nock some o' tha balls in tha holes thay call pockets. If'n ya gits them all in tha pockets ya win. Afor eny ball what goes 'n airy a pocket can be counted fer yer credit tha ball has ta bounce off'n won o' tha side cushions afor it nocks tha ball in.

We played thet game 'till tha fellars went home. Ah really din't git much trainin' 'cept ta larn ta play bilyards.

Tha next time ah went with Mr Bob we drest in sum funny short pants wi' long stockin's whut cum t' tha nees. He called them thar pants nikers. We had on short shoes wi'out leggins. Ah felt plum naked. Mr Bob tuk me ta sum place a fur piece away this time. We traveled quite a while 'for weuns got thar. When we did get thar, Mr Bob tuk me in a building what war bigger'n ar cabin. He tol me who all the fellars wer an thay ast me whar ah war frum. Ah tol 'em Virginny. Then thay all wanted ta no whar in Virginny. Ah tol 'em ah wer frum possum ridge abuv tha Greenbriar Valley. Nun o' them knew whar thet wer so ah hadda tell 'em it wer clost ta Mary land. Thay seem ta be satisfied wi' thet.

Mr Bob pad sum money to a feller an' tol me ta grab a funny lookin' bag wi' sum walkin' sticks in it. Them thar walkin' sticks din't have much o' a handle. Them handles war all kinds o' shapes an' ahm glad ah din't hafta use one. We walkt out ta a flat spot wi' all kinds o' pretty green grass. Thay kept thet grass cut so short it made a purr field fur tha cows ta graz. Ah mentioned thet ta Mr Bob an he laffed so loud ah thot he wer maybe callin' tha cows in. Ah found out in a bit thet it wuzn't fer tha cows.

Wun o' tha fellars went o'r ta a spot an' put a leetle ball on tha grass. He had a bag like tha wun ah had an' tuk wun o' them walkin' sticks an' held the handle down ta tha groun' an' got hissself all fixed by shakin' an a twistin' till he war plum satisfied an' then tuk thet thar walkin' stick an brought 't way back an cracked thet leetle ball wi' tha handle 'o tha walki' stick an' sent thet thar ball a flyin' thru tha air. He were plum happy wi' whut he had dun. Then another fellar did tha same thing an he worn't happy so he thru his walkin' stick ta tha groun' real hard and cusst. Mr. Bob stept up ta tha place an' did whut tothers had did. He war happy wi' his an' tol me ta do tha same. Ah walkt o'r an put a leetle ball on tha groun' an' ast what ah was a aimin' fer. Thay all showd me a flag on a pole way out thar

## Carolyn's Journal

*an' tol me ta hit it. Ah lukt at tha flag an tuk a walkin' stick 'n aimed fer thet flag. Ah pulled thet walkin' stick back real fur an hit thet ball really hard. It went flyin' thru tha air an when 't came down it hit thet thar flag 'n droppt ta tha groun'. Ah cun't see whar 't went atter thet. Weun's walked ta thet thar flag an foun' all tha other fellars balls an' then lukt fer mine. Thar war a hole in tha groun thar an it ha' fel into it. All tha others war a slappin' me on tha back an a tellin me how gud ah dun. They all sed ah had made a hole in won. Ah don' no what thet means but it shore must be gud. They war all happy 'bout it. We walkt all o'r thet pasture nockin' them thar balls in them holes. Ah don' see much sense ta thet game 'cept Mr. Bob sez ah need ta no how ta play it. Tha fellars say ah did plum gud. They say ah did better than airy wun o' them. Ah guess they war tryin' ta make me feel gud.*

*Mr. Bob dun tol me thet ah gotta larn ta tauk better. He say ah need t' no how ta ack 'roun' ladys an men. He say if'n ah do gud he will pay fer me ta see ya all. Tha Barin dun sed he wud take us to ya all when Mr Bob say ah is reddy. Peeple here 'bouts ben reel nise ta yer momma an me sins thay larned we war trying ta larn ta reed n' rite.*

*Thet air 'bout all ah has ta rite fer now. Ya all rite yo momma an' me sumtime an tell us 'bout yerself 'n thet yungun'.*

*Tell Charly we air comin' an' tell tha leetle won we luvv him to.  
With luv frum yer poppa 'n momma*

Suzie read the letter carefully and giggled at parts of it and then sat in her chair at her desk looking at the letter as tears welled in her emerald eyes. She remembered back to the time when she was living with her mother and father in her grandfather's house in Virginia. She remembered the many times that her grandfather or her grandmother would tell her that they were proud of her for something she had done that was meaningful to them. Her mind wandered to the time when her grandfather had taken her to a deep part of a creek and taught her how to swim. He would always compliment her on each of her little successes in learning to swim.

Suzie's own parents would never tell her how much they loved her or how proud they were of her accomplishments. All they ever said was that they knew she could do it. It was no wonder Suzie loved her grandparents the most!

Suzie remembered the sayings her grandmother told her such as: "Birds of feather flock together"; "A dog turns to eat its own vomit"; "a bitch hound has lots of male company"; "you can't make a silk purse from a sows ear"; "don't cry over spilt milk"; "what goes around comes around", "the still sow drinks the swill" and "You can't take it with you". There were many other sayings that her grandmother had given her, but some of them had slipped her mind.

Tears began to roll down Suzie's cheeks as she remembered her grandparents and how nice they had been to her. The most traumatic experience of her young life came when she was taken away from her grandparents as her parents moved to Ohio. This move was a calculated move to let her parents have

## Carolyn's Journal

total control over Suzie's life. Suzie's parents thought the grandparents were 'spoiling' Suzie by telling her how much they loved her and how proud they were of her. It was at this move that Suzie's grandfather had advised her, "Marry the man you love when you are old enough, just be certain he has a lot of money so you won't have to work and rear children." Suzie hadn't thought much of that statement until now. She smiled and said to herself, "I took your advice, Grampa, and didn't realize I had."

Suzie's grandfather had told her many times at the table that she should eat all the hog meat on her plate because the hog gave his all for her, therefore it behooved her to eat all of him.

Suzie remembered the last time she saw her grandpa and grandma. It was the day that her parents decided to move off to Ohio. Suzie was young and did not understand everything that was taking place, but she knew full well that she would probably never see her grandparents again! When it came time for her to be put on the back of the old mule, she kicked and screamed and cried for she loved her grandparents. Her grandpa picked her up, hugged her tight for a moment, whispered in her ear that this had to come to pass and then put her on the back of the old mule. As the mule began its walk to Ohio, Suzie turned to look at her grandparents and shouted, "I love you" with tears streaming down her face and a good-bye wave.

Suzie declared to herself that someday she was coming back to visit her grandparents, but she never had the chance as her grandparents were shot and killed in a gunfight. They were accidentally caught between two feuding groups and were killed in the crossfire. When Suzie learned of this, she cried for a week.

When Suzie did well in school it wasn't to please her parents. They never told her how much they loved her or how proud they were of her so why try to please them? Suzie did well because she knew it would have pleased her grandparents.

Tears rolled freely down her cheeks now after thinking about old times. This letter, even though poorly written, was from her father who wanted to see her and her family so much that he and her mother were willing to humble themselves in the eyes of their neighbors in order to learn to read and write. Here was a man who never told her how proud he was of her now saying that he was proud of her and that he loved her! Where had he been all of those years when she would have loved him if he had just said it once!

Suzie turned to her writing desk, got a piece of paper and a quill. She had determined that she would write her parents and tell them that they could come and see her anytime they wanted. They didn't have to learn to write or to be sophisticated to visit her and the children. They were, after all, one set of their grandparents who should be able to love them and spoil them. She didn't want them to 'put on airs'.

Suzie's parents received her letter and were pleased to hear from Suzie. When they read that they could come see her and the children anytime, they went straight to the Baron and showed him and Carolyn the letter. They asked

## Carolyn's Journal

the Baron if he would still take them to Suzie. The Baron reminded them that he had promised and that he would keep his promise.

It took Bob a while to get someone to replace Suzie's father, but as soon as he did, Suzie's parents were on their way with the Baron. Carolyn couldn't go as the children were still in school.

When the Baron and Suzie's parents arrived at Suzie's place, Suzie opened her arms to hug her mother and father. They both fell into her arms and hugged her and kissed her cheek. This brought tears to Suzie's eyes as she had waited for this day a long time!

Suzie's father looked at her and exclaimed, "Suzie! You are beautiful! Are you sure you are mine?" Then he laughed.

Suzie looked at him and replied, "Yes, Father I am yours." Tears welled up in her eyes. Things were happening that she had always wanted to happen and to be said. How long she had waited to hear these things! She grabbed her father by the hand and walked him into the nursery.

The children were all in the nursery, so she introduced her children to their grandparents. Her parents hugged and kissed each of the children and began talking to their grandchildren and admiring some of the things the children had made.

Even though Suzie had never had that kind of attention, it was a satisfaction to see her children get it.

## Glossary of Terms and Facts

**Andrew Ellison** - A man of some wealth who joined with Robert Hamilton to build the Pine Grove Furnace. Andrew Ellison was Robert Hamilton's father-in-law. Andrew requested that he be buried above ground in an iron casket. His heirs did this and because of the unusualness of the situation, curiosity seekers came and damaged the grave site. The heirs then buried him underground.

**Ball Room** - A large room in a mansion, palace or castle made especially for dances.

**Bath Tub** - A metal tub about the size of a washtub with a metal flange about the top to keep splashed water from getting onto the floor. It was light and therefore portable. There is one on exhibit in the store at Buckeye Furnace.

**Bed Chamber** - A large chamber made especially for sleeping. It was much larger than the ordinary bedroom.

**Blacksmith** - A man usually who works making items from raw metal, iron in particular. He was also the one who shod the horses.

**Blower** - The man who has the overall charge of the operation of the furnace from charging it to tapping it and the casting of the molds or pig iron.

**Buckskin** - A fine leather made from the skin of a deer.

**Buckskins** - A garment made from buckskin leather. It usually had a tunic and a pair of trousers. It could have beads fastened to it for decoration and always had lots of tassels.

**Burden** - Iron ore, charcoal and limestone that was placed in the furnace to smelt the iron. It was measured by bushels of charcoal and pounds of iron ore and limestone.

**Campbell, John** - A man who came to the area and clerked in the company store at Pine Grove. He later borrowed money from his people and started other furnaces in Lawrence county, Jackson County, Gallia County and in Kentucky. He began Ironton, Ohio in 1850 and built a house there that still stands today. He was an abolitionist and had tunnels and secret doors in his house and his brother's house next door. He had runaway slaves taken from his home in a covered wagon to Mt Vernon Furnace where they were then carried further on the underground railroad.

## Carolyn's Journal

**Camphene** - A very volatile substance derived from turpentine. It was later used in lamps and proved to be too undependable as it would occasionally explode. It did this once and killed an iron master's daughter.

**Canal Barge** - A boat shaped like an Indian moccasin that was drawn by horses along the canals. They carried freight and passengers.

**Canning** - A process used in the home to preserve vegetables, fruits and meats for winter use.

**Chamber pot** - A large porcelain or brass mug used in the bedroom of guests for defecation during the night.

**Chandelier** - A large circular light fixture that held candles. It was usually made with cut glass to magnify the light from the candles. It was suspended from a chain or rope so it could be lowered to light the candles.

**Chestnut tree** - A large deciduous tree that bore burrs with several delicious nuts inside. This tree is almost extinct now as a disease has killed most of them. The wood from the chestnut tree did not deteriorate readily and was therefore desired for building. It made a good shade tree and blacksmiths liked to set up shop under them. Chestnuts can be found in grocery stores around Thanksgiving and Christmas time. These nuts come from Italy usually.

**Chiffonier** - A tall open front cabinet that was used for displaying items. Dishes were the usual items displayed.

**Chifforobe** - A tall, large cabinet that was placed in the bedrooms or bed chambers to hang clothing. It had doors on the front and a drawer at the bottom. A closet.

**Christmas Decorations** - Holly wreathes for the windows. Popped corn strung on a string for the tree. Strung cranberries for the tree. A paper angel for the top of the tree. Other religious symbols cut from paper and hung on the tree. Socks were hung on the mantle for presents. Large presents were placed under the tree.

**Cistern** - A large rock and cement tank used to catch rain water to be used for various things. At Pine Grove an extra large cistern was made to have water for the burning of the ore and to cool the moldings and pig iron. It also was used to wet the molds so they would hold their shape.

## Carolyn's Journal

- Clapboards** - Sawed, wooden boards that overlapped lengthwise on the side of a building to keep the weather out.
- Coach** - A four wheeled vehicle either open topped or closed top that was pulled by a team of horses. A stage coach is an example.
- Coblentz** - A city in Prussia along the Rhine River. The present day city spells its name Koblenz.
- Collier** - A man whose job it was to rick (stack) the wood in a meiler and to make certain the wood burned as it should in order to make the best charcoal.
- Common School** - A school of the times for children in grades one through eight. Girls could go no higher.
- Cord of Wood** - A stack of wood eight feet long, four feet high and four feet wide. Pine Grove furnace used 11,045 cords of wood yearly.
- Dormer** - An attic room with a window and part of the room juts out of the roof line.
- Dunkirk** - A city in western New York state southwest of Buffalo on Lake Erie.
- Féodore** - Pronounced Fay-o-door. A half sister to Queen Victoria.
- Finishing School** - A school that girls were sent to after Common School to teach the social graces. Girls were not allowed to further their formal education beyond Common School. Only parents who could afford it sent their girls to Finishing School.
- Fire Brick** - A rock cut into the shape of a brick that has refractory properties. It was used in the lining of the furnaces because it would not allow heat through it easily and it did not crack easily from the heat.
- Foot Hills** - The south eastern quarter of Ohio has a series of hills and ridges that are precedent to the mountains further east and south. These hills do not rise more than 300 to 400 feet above the surrounding plain.
- Governess** - A young lady hired to take care of children, to educate and to train them in the social graces.
- Great Spirit** - The most high god of the Indians.

## Carolyn's Journal

**Hamilton, Robert** - A man of means who had worked with Andrew Ellison in building Pine Grove Furnace. He was a very religious man who started closing the furnace down for Sundays. This was followed by all other furnaces and continued until World War II. He actually came from Fayette County, Pennsylvania.

**Hanging Rock** - A point of land along the Ohio River on the Ohio side that has a rock outcropping sticking out that looks like a cornice of a house. The Indians used it for a look out point because they could look up the river and down the river for miles.

**Hewed** - Rocks were hewed with a chisel and a hammer while wood was hewed with a special axe. The sides of the rock were squared up and the sides of a log were squared up by hewing. This allowed the rock or log to fit into its position more squarely and left little chance for weather to get between rocks or boards.

**Lawrence County** - The southern most county in Ohio. It is bordered on the south by the Ohio River, the East by Gallia County, the north by Jackson County, and the west by Scioto County. This county is in the middle of the famous Hanging Rock Iron District. This was the reason for so many iron furnaces.

**Leprechaun** - A diminutive elf of Irish folklore. To catch one was to get great wealth. Carolyn loved to tell tales about Paddy's escapades with this little fellow.

**Logger** - A man who hauls, cuts and stacks the logs after the tree has been felled.

**Love Seat** - A couch made to seat only two people. It was usually overstuffed with horse hair. Young boys and girls courted on it.

**Luggage** - Because of the slower modes of transportation, ladies in particular had to pack more clothes for a trip. They packed in a trunk that was about three feet wide, three feet high and four feet long. The ladies wore several different hats so they had several hat boxes to go with the trunks. For shorter trips they packed in special made bags.

**Meiler** - Pronounced miler. A conical shaped stack of wood for making charcoal of the wood.

## Carolyn's Journal

- Midwife** - A woman sought by expectant mothers to help with the birthing of a baby. Usually two women came and the second one told funny stories and otherwise did what she could to ease the pain.
- Mission Schools** - These were church operated schools mostly by the Catholic Church for Indians and early settlers.
- Nursery** - A room in a house designated as the place where the babies will sleep and spend most of their time until they are old enough to have their own room.
- Ox** - A castrated bull used for work.
- Pig Iron** - Long, narrow iron bars cast at the furnace for shipment to a foundry.
- Pine Grove** - A community located in an area where many pine trees grew on the hillsides. The location of the charcoal iron furnace of this story.
- Post** - The name given to our today's post office. A place where letters are mailed or received.
- Prussia** - A European country that later became part of Germany.
- Royal Coach** - The same as a regular coach. The only difference being that the royal coach was made more elegant and had the king's Royal Crest on the side. The open coach was used for parades and sunny days. The closed coach was used for night travel or hauling luggage and the royal family.
- Screen** - A set of hinged panels that folded up for storage or opened out for a person to tend to private needs behind it. All bed chambers had one.
- Sea Sick** - A non life threatening sickness caused from the movement of a ship. The inner ear gets confusing signals from the pitching and yawing of the ship through the water.
- Sedative** - A drug used to put people to sleep or ease pain. It came in the form of a powder at the time of the story and was sometimes referred to as "powders".
- Sites of England** - There are many things to see in England. Some of those sites are Westminster Abbey and Big Ben.

## Carolyn's Journal

**Southampton** - A seaport on the southern coast of England. A beautiful natural harbor.

**Spirits** - Alcoholic beverages.

**Sperry's Fork** - A creek that runs through Pine Grove being joined near the furnace by another branch. Sperry's Fork runs on into Pine Creek.

**Stern** - The back end of a boat. It is the hardest riding part of the boat and therefore cabins in it are cheaper.

**Sun Bonnet** - A covering women wore to cover their heads when out in the sun. It could have a long visor to keep the sun from the face or it could have a short visor. The bonnet itself covered the sides of the head as well as the top.

**Surrey** - A four wheeled vehicle drawn by a horse that had a top with open sides. It had two seats, one in front and one in the back. It was light and therefore could travel faster than a coach.

**Swamp** - A shallow body of water. Ohio had swamps over some of the south, west and northwest until canals were built to drain them. Two north-south canals were dug for transportation. One from Portsmouth to Cleveland and the other from Cincinnati to Toledo.

**Tapping a Furnace** - A clay ball was placed in the mouth of the furnace until the iron was ready to pour. The heat of the furnace hardened the ball to where it had to be broken in order for the iron to pour. This was done by two men holding a long iron bar against the ball and a third man hit the opposite end of the bar with a twenty pound hammer until the ball broke. Thus came the phrase "Tapping the furnace".

**Tunnel Head** - The top of the stack where burden was dumped into the furnace.

**Tuyere** - Pronounced Twee. A small opening on the side of the firebox through which air was pumped in order to make the blast of the furnace.

**Union Furnace** - The first charcoal furnace in Lawrence County. It could produce about one ton of iron a day.

**Union Landing** - This was a place that had been fixed special on the side of the river for boats to tie up to unload their goods or to take on goods. The iron

## Carolyn's Journal

from Union Furnace was shipped from this landing and therefore lent its name to the landing.

**Venison** - A delicious meat from a deer. If fixed properly it is sweeter than beef and finer grained.

**Virgin Forests** - The forest that were on the land at the time settlers settled the country. They were about like the jungles of South America and Africa.

**Yoke** - A carved wooden piece that was curved to rest on the necks of oxen. It had a bow that went under the necks of the oxen to hold it on.

**Yoke of Oxen** - Two oxen trained to work together. Oxen did a lot of the hauling of goods. Some pulled wagons of people to the western lands for settlement.

**Wagon** - A heavy four wheeled vehicle that was made especially for hauling heavy loads. The covered wagon carried people to the far west.

**Wee People** - The fabled Leprechauns of Ireland.

**White Mare** - A white female horse. Carolyn was presented one by the Indians.

## Further Reading

### For further reading on the New Madrid earthquake:

Great Disasters, Reader's Digest Association, Inc., Pleasantville, New York, Montreal 1988 pp 104-107.

Nature on the Rampage: Our Violent Earth, National Geographic Society, Washington DC, 1986 pg 50.

Planet Earth, Earthquake, Bryce Walker, Time-Life Books, Alexandria, Virginia, 1982 pp 112-113.

The Smithsonian: Guide to Historic America, The Plain States, Suzanne Winkler, Tabon and Chang, NY., 1990 pg 24.

### For further reading on the Virgin Country:

"The Rich Land of the Frontier", James Smith 1783-1797, The Annals of America vol.4, Encyclopedia Britannica, Inc., Chicago-London, 1968 pp10-12.

History of Ohio: From Glacier Period to the Present Time, JP Lawyer, 3rd edition, Union Publishing Co., Columbus, Ohio 1905.

History of the United States, David Ramsey, MD, vol 3 second edition, revised and corrected, McCory & Son, Philadelphia, Pa., May1,1818.

The Charcoal Iron Industry of Hanging Rock Iron District- Its Influence on Early Development of the Ohio Valley, Wilbur Stout, Ohio Historical Society, Columbus, Ohio pp 72-104.

The Manufacture of Iron in All Its Various Branches, Frederick Overman, second edition, Henry Baird, Philadelphia, Pa. 1851.

Discovering America's Past: Customs, Legends, History and Lore of Our Great Nation, Reader's Digest Association., Pleasantville, NY 1993.

A Standard History of the Hanging Rock Iron Region of Ohio, vol. 1, Eugene B. Willard, The Lewis Publishing Co., 1916 pp265-289, available Ohio Historical Society, Columbus, Ohio.

Wilbur Stout Papers, Collection 408, Preliminary Inventory, Ohio Historical Society, Columbus, Ohio.

Visiting Our Past: America's History Lands, National Geographic Society, Washington, DC, 1977 pp 191-229.

The Ironton Register, November 26, 1863, "Public Sale of Pine Grove Furnace and Hanging Rock Coal Works" Briggs Lawrence County Public Library, Collections Section, Ironton, OH.

The Ironton Register, 1850, pg 5, Briggs Lawrence County Public Library, Collections Section, Ironton, OH.

The Ironton Register, December 3, 1903, "Gray Sanatorium Temporarily Closed", Briggs Lawrence County Public Library, Collections Section, Ironton, OH.

**Interviews with furnace worker's descendants:**

**Deer, Naomi**, Information about the people and workers living in Pine Grove.

**Jeffers, Hudson**, Information about Mt Vernon Furnace and a pencil sketch of the iron master's mansion there. He used to live in that mansion and knew the spot that a previous iron master's daughter was burned to death. He had hired men to tear down the old Vernon Furnace.

**Malone, Carl**, Help in locating all the charcoal iron furnaces in Lawrence County. He helped me locate the old blacksmith cabin from Pine Grove. He showed me the capstone from the Pine Grove Furnace after its overhaul in 1844. He took me to some of the worker's log cabins built in the 1800's and still being lived in. These were both one story and two story. He showed me the cemeteries, churches, schools and company stores that were built for the workers of the furnaces. The only thing missing from the Pine Grove Furnace is the furnace itself. He also showed me the grade for the old Iron Railroad and the grade for the DT&I Railroad. Both RR's no longer operate there. He also showed me the place the tramway ran from Pine Grove Furnace to New Castle where it connected to the railroad from New Castle to Union Landing.

**Malone, Donna**, Gave information on Robert Hamilton's mansion, known later as Gray Gables. She supplied me with a picture of that home as she operated it as a nursing home for a while.

**Richendollar, Mrs. James**, She supplied me with information about the company store at Pine Grove. She had a painting of Pine Grove and the first ledger for the furnace. She gave me the liberty of taking a picture of both of them.

**Rose, Everett (Monk)**, He was 98 in 1994 when I first interviewed him. He informed me of the location of some of the buildings for the furnace. He told me of the tramway and that he had sold the rocks and gravel from it to pay for his property. He told me that mules were used to pull the tram cars to New Castle because part of the tramway went underground and oxen would not go underground. He also pointed out two large iron pots he owned that were used to wash the undersides of the mules each evening. These pots had been cast at Pine Grove Furnace. He also showed me a piece of iron that had been smelted at Pine Grove. He and his son were of great help.